

Stanisław Giers ,Zain Agha,Ayano Chindy,Dawn VanVamp Asami'z,Princess Yuki Nyan,Titankronos9,Dorothea Kirilova,Eunice Rie Ichikawa, Micanikko,Shin Kim Kyujong Auska,Bogdanescu Anca-Maria,Seena Komoniwa,Sasuke Uchichaa

Dedicated in memory of my Grandmother.  
Irene who died in 2002 ,may God bless her and give her a peacefull rest.

BLAZE MASTER ETERNAL WAR

WRITTEN BETWEEN 2011-2012  
with the help of my friends

Mathew 16:28

„I can guarantee this truth: Some people who are standing here will not die until they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom.”

“One distant star that shines with the power of God, celebrating the life in the Universe, home to warmth. One distant star that shines so far away in space engulfed in the cold darkness spreading its warmth to planets every plant and every animal carries it's light in its own core... Oh the distant star I send you a prayer from the coldest deapth of Universe as a beloved creation of GOD made to resemble him please continue to give us the warm we need.”

“I dedicate this work of fiction to our beloved creator master of all that is seen and unseen the one that is watching over us from the past and continues even today. The creator of our free will. The true master, GOD. May the light of knowledge and love befall on us living. May we be blessed in participating in Your holy work and may my small and insignificant attempt at describing You're glory. May this small fiction world be blessed, from the Heavens and continue under Your divine inspiration. I want to dedicate this work to the Father and Son and to the Holy spirit. I ask you for help and guidance. I also ask You to acknowledge the works of our minds and heart in Your favour.”

“In the times of ancient evil 106 chosen people will save the world”

## The Prologue:

The first prime to manifest the universe were the impuls ... which became God. The manifestation of intelligence locked in a single electromagnetic symbol. First were two values + positivity meaning kindness , happiness and positivity. And the other one; - Minus ,negativity meant to represent evil ,nothingness, pain, despair and sorrow. The binary code 0 and 1. These two simple values became our universe's basic foundation. The language that started everything billions of years ago, the first elemental values , good and evil were thus created equal and yet un equal. The world was created out of this opposition. Kindness was always meant to oppose evil....

But, was that true?

These two opposing force's were created alongside each other. They were meant to create something by opposing each other just as neutrons create a single atom in space. But this opposition can take many forms different structures can therefore be created. Different atoms, in turn create different types of matter, right? We, therefore have a language created out of opposition. Its like in these ancient scriptures where "WORD BECAME MATTER."

So if our world is something similiar to a book or maybe even to a computer program, where are it's designers? Can we assume it's designer is the inteligent energy that begun experimenting with our basic values? Is that GOD? Could this even be called a God?

So let's begin once more. Who or what is God ?

Originally in ancient societies, God was portrayed as a ancient patriarchal figure in the same manner as leaders are presented. God was actually considered to be a very powerfull leader. A leader in every aspect. A religious leader like a high priest and at the same time as a king. The term of God is in fact similiar in meaning to both these figures, because God is considered to be both a high priest and a very benevolent king.

But is this potrait of God true?

Yes and no ,because it was what we could call popular demand this kind of God figure was created to keep up with the illusion, or background of a dream-like gameworld we all live in, and then again the true God, is nothing like we expect him to be. It is the creator of all forms despite not having a form for itself not requiring any to exist. But the ancient minds of people needed clear forms that they could understand and categorize this Mighty Creator deserved to be celebrated, worshiped praised and used for gains of these that didn't posses such might, therefore religion was created mixing knowledge based on observation with lies and doctrinology ,creating first societies that were based on

beliefs that its leaders were the sons of gods destined to govern humanity, which eventually introduces another item of worship.  
It has the symbol of greed and selfishness: MONEY.

Divisions were created by the possession of this item and society was lead into its illusions and away from the real God. Eventually all of these things became more mixed and twisted and were lead to our current state of affair.

Despite these lies and deceptions, the truth has not completely dissapeared. These are locked in ancient scriptures ready to enlighten all those who dare to seek it. The old ancient prophets directed by the light helped to create the foundation of our divine world despite the darkness and ignorance appearing to control everything it has on it's hands. The light taught us to love, and inspired to seek out the truth about our world. The same light that didn't disappear at all. Just hiding between the darkness that spread and engulfed by our highly advanced world. This knowledge is presented to you as a tiny fragment, but it has it's own unique role to play in the events that were yet to come.  
come.....  
.....  
.....  
.....  
.....  
.....  
.....

Our story begun in the dark chaple placed inside some structure ,the chaple itself was full of dark aura and violet energy mist was flowing in the air creating a buzzing energy sound that fullled the area,it was very dark and gloomy a truely mysterious and perhaps terryfying place without no life the first thing that really would catch anyones attention would be grey ancient collumns that went upwards these colums were inscripted in ancient hieroglyphic language , spells that were cast upon this temple to make it unnoticable to the dark gods ,God and any other beeings that could detect any paranomal activity ,the enviroment was stable not a single wind blow in the darkness near the collumns green sacrificial fires were burning producing the violet smokes,these fires stood on strange pot like constructions locked in by energy barriers that hold the fire and its contents while releasing a violet smoke which was a key component in the magical bariers that were used to hide this magical shrine the collumns were lightened up as different hieroglyphs were lighten in different color ,an magical interface that told its users that theire secret was beeing safe. The Floor of this chaple was dark marble and the collumns grey , sacrificial fire places were set in the asymetrical manner while in the middle a red road was created as the floor was lighten up by a powerful red light that acted like a red carpet the shrine had an interesting oddity to it as in the skies you could see entire galaxies ,red ,blue yellow and in different other colors. The Shrine was located in the first dimension that is called by me Echelion this mysterious dimension was both a border between dimensions and a dumpyard of creation it was also used to house the most dangerous demonic criminals which couldn't be resocialized and were dangerous to the outside. This dimension was Gods safety measure to keep all dangerous idea's out of the material world to store energy and to give birth to different dimensions created by single idea's . It is funny how people belittle theire imagination not beeing able to understand how a single thought might influence entire galaxies ,the dimension which most visit only in theire dream

state to throw away all their thoughts which they produce during their normal activity like a field that was always filled with seeds that were human and demonic thoughts the power of their minds, this place could materialize every thought and therefore every even unrealistic structure could materialize and that's how this dark chapel was created, the chapel where the entire story began, a continuation of a battle I fought 75 years ago. The story which I thought was already over, was now to continue the carpet was shining red as a young boy was walking in it walking to his destination. The young boy stood on the gigantic rim that bordered the glass windows, their size as if crafted from clear consideration for Gods. As the silhouette turned and walked alongside them, its shadow paced the brilliant red carpet. He stopped and crouched down, his shadow a prying creature now, The boy's eyes locked to the ground. His blond hair shrieking out from under the thin cloth for his hood, "Those who have viewed from the top will never forget the view" He echoed. though it was a whisper but it succeeded in haunting every brick of the chapel. His eyes sparkled, Dietrich was getting restless. The dark shadow birds passed him as he made his way to what obviously appeared to be a throne room the entire place

was filled with a violet smoke that carried red energy lightings which in some weird manner greeted with Dietrich as he walked to his destination mumbling something to himself he was awaited and his restlessness came from the fact he was hurrying. The Dark Shadow birds looked at the boy with their red shiny eyes growling terrifyingly this was a very ominous place. 'ominous' the thought only made him chuckle. from somewhere inside him a hollow voice was screaming unfathomable things to him, "More. I want More" He narrowed his eyes absent-mindedly, and a black raven croaked out in alert. he sighed, he felt his strength increasing with time and he liked it. He looked at the blue stone on his ring, No, he loved it. after being sick for such a long time who knew this would be it. "what a foolish world" he told merrily to the perplexing bird, then he made his way. In front of him golden stairs going above to a dark marble throne and this figure sitting on it looking like a handsome dark haired man. Sitting in the same manner as if he was the messiah fabled saviour of ancient worlds however this holy appearance was deceitful as the nature of this being that sat on the throne this man that looked into the distance dressed in black robes with belts crafted out of energy who gazed upon the boy walking over on the golden stairs smiling gently as his favourite puppet made his way towards him.

„You finally came my disciple” He decided to speak with a calm dark toned voice deceptfully making the boy feel comfortable while in reality he held nothing but mere contempt to the creatures of the lower worlds but this puppet could be useful and probably it was the main reason he bore its presence the boy knew nothing about evil ambitions of the dark God before him. The Dark God was the master of destruction a crown dark angel whose influence reached the far reaches of known universe, feared by many his dreadful ambitions scared all creation the entire chapel sang its strange song glorifying the evil master and this spiritual song was heard everywhere in every brick and in every part of the matter adding to the metaphysical experience of this destructive place, the shrine which was engulfed in darkness Galamouth's prison and main base of operation he's only known home was this darkness that was created from depths of his own hearth. The Chapel itself was like a dark prayer for destruction, like a desperate plea to end all creation, why would one want to be destroyed? If one believes everything around him is a lie, and cannot bring

himself to find goodness in others he will not see any of it in himself, pushing further towards eternal darkness and nothingness this is the power of darkness that scientifically could be described as depression this too is a sign of corruption and darkness that wants to shatter souls and destroy hearths how many wars were fought because of this ? How many wars were to begun because of this ? Dietrich felt his own version of serenity as he approached the majestic dark figure. His pace had increased once he left the golden stairs, lets get this over with. He was fed up with this old fashioned aura he met with.

A smile played at his lips as he felt the unknown force push him down, crushing him to a bow. Ah, clever! very clever. he loved the way Galamouth played God. Once he had fancied the idea himself, of Galamouth as his own personal God. but he had outgrown such foolish child's play. " My my. Now what have you to hide from me, my lord?" The next instant his cocky smile was replaced by a groan, his grey eyes to a fiery color. His heart bore malicious lust and his mind was in nightmarish pursuits, as Dietrich clenched his teeth, his face hidden by the blonde curtain his hair made. Galamouth, indeed very clever. Dietrich hoped he was hearing his thoughts because he had nothing to hide. He couldn't care less if Galamouth smashed his muscles and splintered his bones. Dietrich would meet Galamouth's eyes, even if he was greeted by void. He leaned on the pressure biting his lip and tasting his own blood. What have you to hide?. was I not made to be perfect? Dietrich screamed in his head. He was shaking all over. "Greet my gaze master. Grant me that one wish" quit the show and let me be.

Galamouth looked at his puppet sliding his fingers on the brown wooden ornaments of his throne his eyes greeted with Dietrich eyes as the boy stood on the dark marble floor on top of the golden stairs and in front of the red throne Galamouth was sitting on a small smirk came on Galamouth's face while he was amused by the boy's thoughts.

„There isn't a single thing worth of being perfect in my eyes as everything is a deceptful illusion ,nothing more than lies created to torment the weak minded fools ,this world is full of disgusting decay which must be cleansed” Said Galamouth as his dreadful hollow gaze met with Dietrich eyes insisting fear in the boy's mind as he was looking at the being that dared to show itself in front of him „you are to perform few simple tasks before your usefulness comes to an end” proclaimed Galamouth making his desires known to the boy he perceived as a mere tool to grant his ambitions ,he looked at the boy's reaction feeling a bit fearful and detestful just as if he was reliving something painful. Tarnished by violent emotions created by the darkness inside him ,he held himself in one place not allowing his anger to drag him into lower pits of true hell he unknowingly created for himself, green energy lightened the marbles the boy was standing on making magical symbols show themselves these symbols told a dreadful ancient story of an old sorcerer that found out the most mysterious knowledge of the universe and because he knew the truth this made him detest these that didn't know it making his pride hate all of existence.

Dietrich started chuckling, his eyes were drooping. he might as well be intoxicated by the situation. Finally, the coward is out of his shell his thoughts were fairly frank. His body shook with laughter and he managed to speak between convulsions, " too bad you are in my head eh.....but you already knew that...." and then on a louder note ".....you know everything!!!" he fell on his knees, still in a fit of mad laughter. "too....tt.o..too bad. " he stammered.

Galamouth looked at the boy being intoxicated with Dietrich's fear and feeling more amused by the darkness that befallen this once cheerful child ,Galamouth once again lifted his gaze towards the boy.

„I know of your failures, do not fail me again ...gather the chosen children its time to grant their destiny than you are to make contact with Dark Master inform him the time has come to enact the procedure” Galamouth raised his hand calling the red energy toward him making it gather towards the stairs and engulf them forcing him to push it back as it formed whirlpools which then materialised into some glass eclipse containers.

„observe ...these are the holy spiritual containers for the darkness you create with these filled we will start the anti God spell which will nullify all of creation do well my disciple and your nightmares will disappear” Galamouth proclaimed showing him parts of his plan making sure he will describe everything to Dark Master and follow through with Galamouth's ambitions.

Dietrich nodded, with a detestable grin. "Your wish is my command, master." He closed his eyes and willingly bowed his head to the ground. His forehead wet from perspiration. When he looked up, the glass containers were still there, ".... and the nightmare goes on I see." With a whip of his hand he had them all under his cloak. Then he turned his back to the throne ready to leave. He savored at least this power, for many of Galamouth's slaves weren't even allowed that. He lightly assailed towards the golden stairs. "what a boring day..." he thought to himself, before disappearing completely.

Galamouth got annoyed by his servants' behaviour growling angrily and then calming down looking at the blue glass containers that were floating above the stairs, moving his hand golden energy flown circling in currents creating a huge golden cloud, as red energy lightings started creating shocks and magical dissolutions that slowly shaped a clear image which shown deep space and the futuristic metropolis we all knew as Megacivilisation, Galamouth observed a certain tube like futuristic massive sky scraper which was built out of silver metal and it itself looked very modern, red lights sparkled on the top of its roof top as many spaceships were going towards it and out of it on numerous levels, landing on the roof tops and entering the building gates which were opening for each individual space ship that entered or left the complex. The Dark Lord Galamouth sat on his red throne observing the whole scene in his sanctuary, being visibly disgusted by the scene he watched

„These artificial walls created by these that possess!! against these that do not possess! make these that have everything! ...unable to understand the pain of these that had everything taken away from them !!!..... fueling hatred between both groups, we will make them slaves to our desires” Galamouth commented to himself smiling visibly admiring his visions and crazy dark dreams feeling as if in this moment he somehow got the power to conquer entire worlds he was right thought but clouded in his darkness saw only death as means of resolving this matter feeling sorrowful and yet trying to fight off his heart wanting only to carry out the nightmare he had planned for the world.

The darkness created unbearable pressure inside his head as if it wanted to crush him at the core, shattering the soul with pain that overflowed him infiltrating every possible essence in his entire existence, he no longer could go back being merely an empty shell for the dark energy a slave of destruction. His mind filled with negative destruction thoughts slowly disintegrated his presence he wanted to scream from the agony but was unable as his pride wouldn't let him feeling weak and alone caring only for his own desires the plan that couldn't ever bring happiness. Only destruction being aware of this and yet being engulfed in the darkness he constructed over millennia's, his eyes were calm angry and scared at the same moment in few seconds experiencing

different states ranging from true happiness to painful sorrow falling between and going up in a split of a second that was the unbearable pain Galamouth felt as he looked at the darkness of his shrine gazing slowly into the distance trying to understand the meaning of his existence wondering whether it had any at all, the beautiful and grotesque young man that became the Dark God master of all darkness and ruled over by it, closing his eyes he returned to the times where even he felt some serenity on a very distant planet covered in beautiful green fields the smell of the sweet air made the dark lord smile as blue petals were falling on this serene environment and suddenly filled with blood stains and explosions another image's that made him scream in agony.

His terrified scream filled the entire chapel making everything go in disarray with his falling heart this world was crumbling apart as giant dark snakes awakened from their slumber and arose towards his throne majestic shadow creatures with red eyes were towering above the fallen God a man lost in his despair and coughing up blood such intense was his pain and hatred for all existence that he couldn't even bear the thought of existing himself the shadow creatures surprised because of the state of their beloved master not being able to feel the darkness inside him not feeling any empathy they just continued silently to observe their master in his despair the whole temple full of the dark winds created by this dark despair and above eyes opening to look and observe to understand this amount of unbearable suffering a soul covered in darkness might have. A beautiful girl walked towards the throne greeted by the dark shadow birds which looked at her with red eyes informing that their lord was suffering they flown above her as she walked below them. She stops walking. In front of the golden stairs and slowly gazed upward seeing her master screaming in agony and trying to calm himself. She try to run away. But the dark shadow birds not let her go, Galamouth looked at the scene breathing calmly while the girl knelt down afraid, moving his hand he made the dark birds fly away from the girl.

„come closer child“ He proclaimed breathing calmly slowly gazing below the golden stairs looking at the girl dressed in blue dress with white buts she slowly walked up to the throne.

Galamouth said to her "will u be baptiz for me?" Looking at her with his dark eyes as the snakes arose surprised near the girl looking at her from below with their red eyes the girl walked back "baptiz?" she asked surprised wondering what the Dark Lord meant by this phrase faithfully looking into his eyes meeting only darkness inside him as he stood up and slowly walked down to the girl "u can have a power to change the world" he quickly added as he was coming to her and gently knelt down looking at her surprised smiling pretending he cared about her trying to make himself look warmer, trustable.

".....change...the world?" The girl spoke looking into his eyes feeling a bit confused shocked by his sudden proposition as the snakes around them looked with disbelief wondering why would the Dark Lord propose such a thing to something so inferior as a little 15 year old girl with blond hair.

"yeah...the power to stop tragedies, to save life" Said Galamouth touching her cheeks and looking at the girl smiling making sure she was calm and ready to obey every single word he told her. Nearing very closely and standing up waving his hand creating whirlpools of golden energy as powerful dark winds started to blow again, the Shrine's pillars and columns were filled with green hieroglyphic signs warning about the dark spell that was about to be created dark red pentagrams appeared as the girl stood up looking around scared

...power?" she asked hesitantly a bit shocked because of the dark

manifestations that took place scaring the girl a bit but she was calmed by Galamouth who gently patted her on the arm relieving all stress from her body as it flown away as dark smoke calming her instantly and making the dark Birds that sat on the collums and observed the whole ritual fly into the air eating the dark smoke as it was grain and flying in circles squeching hoping the Dark Lord would kill the girl for them to eat her but he had other plans as he looked directly into her eyes.

"u can kill the one who killed your sister. Will u accept this power?" He proclaimed and kneeled down slowly looking unto her head as if he would be planning to propose to her ,this was however a sarcastic move one she wouldn't ever understand instead looking at him faithfully. Not suspecting what would happen next.

"....can I" she asked feeling relieved someone understood her pain she beared since so many years ago from that time when it happen a very sad and dark memory her eyes were fullled with tears even more when he suddenly stabbed her with his sword looking schocked at the whole scene as blood was spilling out her cheast she fallen on the red shining floor fulling it with her blood as the birds tried to attack her falling towards her ,Galamouth suddenly made a protective circle telling them to back away.She died crying he than kneeled down touched her neck creating symbols on it as it was covered in darkness she even more schocked opened her eyes breathing her first breath schoked she was alive „You have been reborn as a completelly different greater beeing ,no more shall you be ...just a weak shell...go forward my beutifull daughter lets commence the plan to create a perfect ideal world” Galamouth smirked as he told these words not believing in them himself as the girl suprised standed up.

"what\*s ur name?" The Dark God asked as he helped the girl to stand up looking into her eyes ,reading thoughts that came out of her head looking in it omnimously the girl didn't know what to answer she was a bit dizzy her head full of emotions ranging from anger to happiness she breathed calmly and looked at the Dark Good smiling happilly and helplessly, as he closed his eyes and stood up.

"then i\*ll name you ....you're name will be arua ...Arua Gemind" He proclaimed and walked past her waving his hand as dark powers fullled the temple creating a purple cloud the Dark God looked into the center of this purple mist, the girl schocked walked to the Dark God looking throught his back at the marvels the Dark Lord was creating she innocently looked at him

"arua?"she asked suprised not really understanding the situation it was hard for her to comprehend this situation or the mad ambitions the Dark God had ,he gazed on her seeing the girl very cheerfull.

„Yes this will do ....now I will reveal the secret you were longing for... Blaze Master ...this is the identity of the one who murdered you're beloved sister!” Galamouth looked at her calmly as if he was hurted by revealing her the thruths that were his lies created to fulfill his mad ambitions.

"then can I kill him?" She asked tilting her head to the side looking at the Dark God who aproached the energy turrends making an oltar out of it a golden oltar fullled with ancient inscripture which he studied very closelly reading very slowly as it glowned infront of him the dark birds looked at Galamouth very curiously

"no. U can\*t" he finally answered the girl looking at her analising ,waving his hand making blue smoke cover her as she looked at it very schocked and suprised. "why?" Arua continued to inquire this question looking hopefully in the eyes of the dark God.

"you haven't been perfected yet my child" Galamouth expressed as he studied



the girl's body being very analitical his gaze made the girl blush embarrassed by the sudden interest the Dark God Galamouth had for her, believing it was something good. „you're energy channels must be perfected force ability improved if you were to confront the one known as Blaze Master ,he is a skilled foe unlike anything you ever meet” Said Galamouth looking at the girl smirking acting like a sage for the child ,planning to invoke the forbidden arts of dark craft and harmful magic he slowly tempted her towards a very dangerous fate. He wasn't however bothered by this fact his conscious was dead for a very long time only his ambition to once again envoke the Anti God's spell which in his mind would end the entire existence a bit foolish desire impossible because of the hate that filled every core of this dark dream no one wanted to die even he himself betrayed that evil plan and yet it was the only way he saw to follow thought not realising that even he himself didn't want to perish from such a sorrowful and tearful world. Darkness that engulfed his mind was now spreading in the entire shrine ,filling and furthermore filling every corner only adding more darkness into the shrine this holy temple of darkness ,from which all calamity was to spread unto our futuristic utopia ,this darkness that created illusions lies and deceptions that flown outside to the external world as a girl stood in front of the Dark God.

Arua looked sad into the distance seeing only how the darkness filled the temple she was a bit frightened and tensed ,looking into the distance she merely looked for answers to questions that clouded into her mind,she was now filled with doubts asking herself was it the right way to go ? Somewhere in her heart she knew what was the real purpose the Dark God had ,she knew it was something very evil and terrible just like Dietrich before she too detested such visions ,but she also felt an unbearable pain of losing someone that she loved ,this nightmare was terrible and he the one that stood in front of her bore the prospect of ending this terrible pain. But she try to hide her feeling in front of Galamouth. Thought the Angel of Darkness knew them,he could read them and planned to use them to his advantage after all darkness was a useful fuel,to make everyone hate each other and the world they live in that was his goal after all.

„Sadness makes you have an unbearable expression” he finally commented smirking and looking into Arua's eyes ,savouring the darkness and thorns in her soul ,they really were delicious to him as if it were somekinda delicacies ,the Dark God planned to consume he walked over to the girl kneeling down looking straightly face to face making Arua surprised.

"....sorry" she said very sadly lowering her head in obedience ,understanding that he was her master and she was merely his servant ,roles that shouldn't be questioned,her purpose was simple to obey every command the Dark God would have. Nothing else no discussion quite simple if you waste some time to think about it.

"that's ok my child . Now go to bed" he said breaking the chain of command as he slowly petted her hair, just as if he was her father not master ,but it wasn't due to love that he calmed her emotions it was just to seduce her to make her follow his mad ambition slowly standing he turned back and stepped on the golden steps.

„NO!". "no. I don't want to. So. So!!" She screamed running after him stepping on the golden steps hesitantly and with a dizzy head. Galamouth was annoyed by her tenacity turning towards her and looking on the girl with a mad face.

"I order u Arua to listen to me!!" He yelled at her restoring his chain of command standing and looking angrily but also a bit intrigued at the girl. It was the first

time he saw something of this nature this power ,he again started to fear his survent seeing something he couldn't understand. Galamouth feared things he couldn't understand.

„ No !!” She screamed as she was feeling dizzy and weaking in his eyes, this in turn calmed him making him understand as the girl collapsed he rushed to save her,not fully understanding why he did that ? was it compassion ? No he detested all things yet he hold her firmly and gently looked unto her.

„What a foolish slave” he mumbled to himself.

The hypocrisy of the world which Galamouth hated was created by simple ignorance by definitions that labelled one societary groups above the other, rich against poor who were criminilized because they dared to live against the will of these that seen them only as usseless trash. After all for these masters of the world any opposition was an act of crime that should be punished by death for them people and demons were merelly slaves to be used to earn money which would be gathered for theire ambitions because the rich should have money and a lot of it, all of money from all the reserves possible that was the goal of the greedy whores of the system. Of course if they were the only ones wanting money they could be ridiculled ,have doubts. Thats why they needed othersto desire the same,creating a world culture ,whole entire structures based on greed and envy. Helping to create the establishment and the System,well greed was just one thing that helps the system to hold authority over individuals just one of these lies, that money could bring happiness. Envy and greed ,lust or even obsession with everything the material world had to offer and beeing restrained for that in the name of morality customs or even laws that had nothing to do with Justice. Poor however described as outcast's by them have always been restrained or even tied up unable to do anything because no one really wanted to help them, they became a bother to these rich majorities who created the oppressive regimes , which rallied billions in the name of hate making soldiers not care whom they kill as long as they're paid , after all there's nothing wrong in killing terrorists or criminals they want to destroy „our sanct way of living” our world build from illusions and hate. People and demons treat each other as enemies even if they're from the same social group ,still forced to compete for money destroying each others in the name of illusions created by the rich. The way of living a better start have become an excuse for mass genoicides in the name of law created by states or in our times even by single corporations that become states ,full worlds maximising theire revenue and tying up theire workers with prospects of cupons ,thats what became of money and gold they were replaced with cupons after all Megacivilisation didn't need a single currency because people and demons were required to live only in within corporations as eternal work force these living beyound were enemies thats all ,unless aproprate diplomatic deals were made by rich CEO's. Every single aspect of life could become a subject of these deals it was the CEO's that decided what theire workers eaten ,what brands were they using as food,cloths,druggs etc. It was all decided during buisness meetings of corporation leaders where consem about the well beeing of the workers wasn't ever an issue during these disputs,contrary to the popular belief of course. What was there fore discussed ? Who and how can get more money ,the rich divided the society as if it was somekinda cake. Deciding who should be accepted ,who should be ignored and who should be eliminated. That was the main purpose of theire existence. The corporations feed on the naivette of its workers creating deals that allow them to abuse the weak that is the law of Megacivilisation,that is the law that

rules over the corporate buildings and billions of people and demons that are nothing but slaves only in more modern, utopian settings lied by everyone and everything. In schools taught propaganda they follow blindly orders of their corporate leaders, who have real political power view themselves as God's despite being only man, or servants of the real Gods themselves, yet as long as it's on the grounds of their corporations they can make even deities out of themselves, in the corporate walls there is no higher powers above the CEO this is the true power of market unrestrained without any institutional governance, here in space Corporations which create platforms become their government it is a fair deal and makes the development and restructuring of the void space more easier without any institutionalized pressured or long bureaucratic procedures, simple conquering, taking possession or buying undeveloped space and then building a habitat that usually takes the form of a large universal metropolis combining different entities that guard the structural integrity together. Incredible logistics used to sustain this future environment and allowing free interactions, for what humanity and other forms of life achieved they were worthy of the title of Gods and perhaps that's why the real God allowed for this slowly, making sure knowledge flows freely God too enjoyed this spectacle but detested, hate, greed and ignorance, which was fuelled by the leaders of corporations who went to far. The technocrats that wished to rule entire societies gathered inside the tub like sky scraper Lord Galamouth was observing, lights were turned on in the silver room as drinks and snacks were putted on the huge golden conference table in which built in square display devices projected three dimensional holographs showing the identity and a 3 dimensional model of the leaders assigned to their places. In this temple of commerce everyone had an arranged and assigned seat which he or she will occupy these seats, were the seats of power and authority, for these seats human and demonic lives were often sacrificed. Robots and flying mini spaceships were serving the guests that looked mostly as elderly humans dressed in official suits helping them to sit, they looked dignifying. Clean, well mannered everything in their designs was fashionable and well planned as women were sitting near the man symbolising the importance of both sexes in the commerce sphere. They slowly occupied the golden futuristic seats full of different kinds of gadgets and buttons that served to increase the comfort of these that thought of themselves of being stronger than Gods.

A crowd of people filled the huge room gathering and sitting in front of the table below in class like futuristic benches that were full of mini built in computers these enormous crowd of woman and man was the representation of the universe's media corporations because every major TV or Radio station or even blogs and other forms of propaganda send in their news caster who wore colorful futuristic costumes making them more interesting than the clean business man and woman that wore only arranged fashion. The journalists' clothes were indeed more interesting, their colorful costumes like the colors of rainbow with abstract 3 dimensional logos of media corporations made it a real sight for sore eyes. These people looked at the stage on which the huge futuristic golden table was placed, the stage itself was in fact a wall that was used to divide the audience from the main actors, who were chatting smiling and talking about unrelated stuff preparing themselves to give the spectacle that was long awaited. A very gross topic to deal with wealthy about the poor, the leaders were disputing which beautiful words to use for masking their horrible plans. Not knowing their greed would be used by a much more powerful force than themselves. While at the same In the golden corridors which were well

lighten, deflecting the futuristic lights and at the same time showing off its glorious design, futuristic arrangements such as the plasma monitors that hung from the walls showing the corporation's TV programs that were streamed through the corporation's internal net service, a young man was walking. He was young enough to see his future but not old enough to meet them. His skills granted him passage through his schooling. Though these skills simplified things, nothing was given to him easily. He fought his own respective battles and won them thusly with courage and valor. While he was still a child, he was sought out by a high-ranking member of New Vixaria's royal guard. They saw in him a perfect soldier, one who could be molded in whichever way they desired. During his years at school, they had him train when he wasn't participating in academics. Every waking moment was spent either under a teacher's or master's tutelage. At his eighteenth year, he graduated the academy at the top of his class. From that, straight into the pits of hell.

After his youth, he was immediately taken into his majesty's royal space marines, where he continued honing his skills. He chose as one of his disciplines sword fighting, and became one of the most skilled swordsmen in the galaxy. During his time at the academy, he forged his sidearm blade, which he keeps with him at all times. He created it how many would put it, "the old-fashioned way". He made it out of material found in a dead star's core. This material, dummallium, pronounced doo-mal-ee-um, is also known as dark star fragments and is incredibly hard. He himself forged it, folding it over again and again until he saw it fit to be finally shaped. This material makes the sword unbreakable and able to cut through most anything, he shaped it into a cutlass and laid a dark gloss over the hilt to give it a blackened shimmer. He trained after the late Master Jarate, who died while the academy was under attack from the enemy. The incursion was targeted late at night, and killed thirty-seven students and twelve teachers. While he led many younger cadets to safety during the attack.

For this heroism, he was granted a spot in an upcoming exploration mission, which he was made to lead after the commanding officer resigned. The expedition was a rescue mission to save the people who were the first explorers. When they arrived on the desolate planet, there were no signs of life. It was later discovered that there were creatures living beneath the surface and they kidnapped the explorers with the intent to present them to their "Deity". Captain Howard Levington led a team of twelve into the caverns and returned to the surface with only a few injuries, the scars on his eye and hand. He was welcomed home as a war hero, and was presented an award for his bravery. Captain Howard Levington has been called in for a promotion to commander of his own starship. He is now on his way to the ceremony. There are many high-ranking officers in attendance, including the constable who recommended him to the academy. He walks into the room and no one notices him until he bumps into a person while walking from the back to the front of the room. The gruff general, a man with a thick moustache and eyebrows but no other hair on his head, turned to yell at the person who bumped him, but realized who it was. "Oh Boy, look who's here!" He exclaimed to the crowd and they all stopped and turned to meet his gaze. All at once the crowd begins cheering and shouting. The captain smiles at the crowd and a booming voice calls out over the loud speaker "Alright, alright. Let's calm down now." The emcee soothes the crowd as the captain heads for the stage. "Good evening. First off, I would like to thank all of you for coming. I know many of you have left your posts early in the morning and will have to return, but in due time. We're here to award this man." He turns to our hero and points "This man, has done things that many of you wouldn't attempt.

Has gone places some of you have never imagined. Been heroic at times where heroism would've gotten him killed. This man deserves much more than we can give him, He has earned this."The emcee opens a small box with the captain's new rank.\*"Come forth. I imbue you with your new stature." \*He places the rank on the captain's shoulder. The man that suddenly entered the stage had gathered applauses from all that were present,Buisness people that watched the presentation and the reporters who frantically pressed the buttons on their consoles, sending their broadcasts into the far reaches of the universe. This man despite being young was one of the bravest soldiers in the known universe and still despite that the greedy survents of the system planned to use him as a pawn in their games.The old man dressed in a wonderful golden toxido and an old style gentelmans hat ,with visible computer attachment as the suit was just merely stylised to look as an old style gentel mans costume yet containing all the latest gadgets these kinda weardrobe posses, stood and enthusiastically clapped. Than coughing up a bit to demand some silence.

„being a hero is a virtue” he started taking his stage and walked to the young man shaking his hand „it is a true honor to meet such a fine youngster like yourself...as I said being a hero is a virtue especially in our dangerous times when many of us face attacks from enemy corporations and social outcasts ,universe harbors many criminals and outrageous individuals that spend their times plotting against the established safe zones many of us created by hard labour.Thats why its always important to be vigilant against enemies ,outsiders and foreign agents who's main objectives are to rob us from the peace we established ...our corporation is therefore proud to have among their military forces people who are not affraid to fight oppression. Universe is a dark place hostile to man full of demons, aliens and things which we should all pray to never meet. It is in my opinion that universe isn't a place that should be inhabited by man, representing the voice that unfortunately sounds loudly very late,therefore it is our duty to recreate what we once destroyed. This hard lesson teaches us responsibility for every single being that is in our care.

Yet there are irresponsible groups lead only by financial consens or evil ideology being intoxicated by powers that are beyond our imagination, fools that created tragedies many of which ,present now with us Howard Levington saw for himself its an awesome honor to guest people that can tell this terrible story to us ...please share it with us” Said the old Man bowing in a respect „please enlighten us about the dangers that surround our walls” ended the man and returned to his designated seat at the golden table, while the whole room was filled with applauses as the attention centered at the young man.The captain delves deep into his memories, remembering back to the last few days of his time at the academy. A time before his official service to the corps, he earned experiences there that would save him later in life. Howard begins his tale on a cold and dreary night, everything was calm and quiet. Howard had just turned in for the evening and was climbing into bed. Suddenly, from out of nowhere, there is a loud thud. A few seconds later followed a large explosion. Huge Mortars arc into the building. Howard gets up; another explosion nearly knocks him off of his feet. He makes his way to the hallway to see what was going on, Academy teachers and professors are in the corridors, running into every room trying to wake the students. He meets one of the teachers “Sir, What’s going on?” The professor replies “The school is under attack, evacuate immediately!”. Howard makes his way downstairs, looking up he notices that the staircases above him are engulfed in flames. He continues on through another hall, then through a door he can hear screaming. “Help! The door is stuck, we’re trapped!” Howard

tries the door, It won't budge. He thinks quickly and notices a fire extinguisher on the wall, he breaks the glass and grabs it. Howard uses it to bash the handle off the door before finally knocking the door off of its hinges. "Follow me" He says to the frightened students. Howard escorts them from the building and back to the teachers. Back to the present golden rays of light fallen down on the captain who wore a blue or grey star fleet uniform. As he was telling his story to the world slowly describing the incident concerned with momentary details. Being camered by dark spheres that floated near him, these robots, of corporate origin were controlled from the desks in front of the place Mr Howard was standing delivering his speech, spheres circled the captain as if they were his satellites. People controlling them, were the service staff of some universal media corporation a young dark haired boy and a fat man of 30 years subordinates both dressed in white shirts carrying the company rectangular logo, looking at the woman dressed all red. The woman in red shiny clothings, with light red hair, slim figure. She reminded an amazon or a goddess with her unnatural beauty simply putting everything was perfect in her, attractive tiny black skirt that revealed her light brown skin and beautiful white heels. She knew how to walk seductively, knew how to correct her leather red jacket to look tempting and seductive. It was part of this blue eyed 29, probably 29 year old woman's trade. She was a huntress that hunted for every information, being able to sacrifice everything her body had to offer in order to extract this vital piece that would make the next news...on the news coverage of her universal media company, she too was a soldier that was able to go very far. Gently sitting on the stage edge she looked back at the stage and at the man who was telling his story analysing him a bit, preparing herself to ask the question. She knew that the people were looking at her. But she also knew that the dark haired boy and the fat man next to him weren't at her level. The dark haired boy inputted some commands into his computer device, turning his attention towards the fat guy waving his hands on the man, who was controlling a huge camera crane that lowered itself closer, camering the woman. She angrily turned her head on the other side. She wanted to get her job done. Sometimes she just hated her job. Sometimes she just got bored of all of this. But it was her job after all. And she loved it...most of the time. The young man waved, "you're going in few minutes" he said. While the fat guy was synchronising the volume, with the audio image that was recorded by his futuristic equipment. Lowering the camera crane, to get a full image of the woman as she began her broadcast. She stood up and prepared herself to ask the questions, but she couldn't say a word. That was strange for her. She wasn't afraid but yet she wasn't as brave as she was before, above on the stage a heated debate was taking place, the elites were arguing about the most effective way to justify their greed, the young reporter only now started to realize how huge and powerful this event was. How small and shallow were the minds of these that were supposed to rule entire galaxies, these man and woman of wealth were acting like children, now she was supposed to ask the question, but only the questions that were scripted for her to be asked, no questions that would be important, she had a script and a role to play and this was what frightened her. She began to bite her lips wondering what to do now. She had no idea. So many thoughts were running through her mind and she was scared and confused. If she asked the wrong question, she will be fired for sure. But what was the right question? "what the fuck you're doing get out there !" The Dark haired man yelled at the woman, seeing her troubled almost praying she would already start the broadcast as precious time was moving forward, yes ! in this temple of greed even time had a price and the woman was supposed to act in

the right way in this time, for which she would be paid by the media company. „its your first day on the job don't screw it” he whispered silently to her hoping to motivate the woman to do her job. She started looking around her with a scared and puzzled look. "Why I am so nervous? Oh God I don't want to be here? What am I thinking I have to focus! I want to disappear" she thought. The young man walked over to her and patted her back. „what's up ?..you know what to do right ?” The dark haired man asked while giving signs to the fat guy that operated the camera „its a big deal, we gotta do it or the boss will kill us, its your chance to shine” the man added looking at her and walking back to his friend. „are we gonna do it or not ?” The fat guy asked „just give the girl her time” the young man replied. The man shown her signs and turned on the camera „you're on !!” he yelled and expected the girl to perform well. "I...i...can't do it i have no idea what is going on with me i have never felt that way before I'm so sorry but i need a moment" she said and ran away crying. The Fat Guy turned off the camera and sighed almost weeping, as the young guy angrily kicked the camera „were so dead !” he looked at his friend, sitting down and taking out a cigarette, walking over to his friend and sharing the cigarette with him, lighting up himself and for his buddy „I could have had my ex into this, fuck !” he screamed. She goes to the other end of the room crying "I'll die I'll surely die” she cried, her fear being incredible, she felt as if she was entering a cave full of terrible monsters and she was right, these weren't humans, or even demons, these greedy humanoid creatures were worse than anything hell could produce, she breathed hardly, not feeling alright. "I think...I think...I will...." she started crying again. The tears were falling from her face ruining her make up. She slowly pushed her head to the side as she started vomiting from stress, making the medical team come closer to her, a very young golden haired boy dressed in futuristic white clothes accompanied with two girls, one green haired the other pink haired, dressed in quite fashionable, medical uniforms came closer to the young journalist „are you all right miss” the young doctor calmly asked. "I don't know I have never felt it" she cried. The young doctor walked closer, kneeling down and attached a white cylindrical mini computer device, that shown strange symbols and played a calm song, he took the device away and read a report that was shown on its screen „it appears to be stress miss” the young doctor calmly replied, smiling to her childishly as he was just 10 years old, only an apprentice under another Doctor, practicing to become the best doctor in the entire corporation, the boy was excited because it was his first serious medical mission. "But I had never been nervous before! What's wrong with me" she cried louder. Tears started to fall down her cheeks again. Her make up was totally ruined. "Oh damn i look terrible" she thought. The boy smiled calmly and slowly stood up „but its all right..you see most people get nervous when they work too hard and it causes serious medical problems that can be cured after calming down” the boy smiled as his blue eyes shined in excitement, while he himself was being observed by a dark bearded man, who was the doctor that taught this new apprentice. The room was covered in golden lights as other crews were working very tentaculously, covering this event, the girl looked at them crying feeling so humiliated, she was humiliated feeling so weak, not being able to do anything. Unlike the boy, she herself didn't have the courage to face the challenge ahead, she was very terrified of this pressure, now feeling abandoned wondering what she will do if she gets fired. For her it wasn't just a matter of a job, she was raised to become a journalist, being raised by the media company in its facilities, if she couldn't do her job, what other reason would be there for coming back, for living ? Why so cruel approach to her, why

to pose such questions ? What is worth life in the system ? Its worth nothing,in societies life of single individuals is often worthless.Demons,Angels and even humans are used as slaves by few well established greedy individuals that in turn are used by their own greed,becoming slaves to it.In this systemized world usefulness meant life,not being of any use meant it was time to die. For why would the System and the Established order care for anyone,that cannot be made profit from,be in debts take loans,buy,spent go to work,earn money and pay that is the role of everyone inside the system,nothing else matters its a sad reality.Greed and lust ruled everything and took away passion,dreams and even love making it forbidden,not responsible,shameful behaviour,true feelings were made to be disgusted as greed and lust were glorified taking their place. She was a female journalist, raised in that manner by the almighty Corporation,she didn't have any relatives,any family just her corporation,friends at work in that job,she failed everyone because she started to have feelings and was not comfortable with it,because of the shock , seeing these mighty ,she realized how weak she was,how worthless her existence was. The girl wanted to scream in horror but couldn't. Being surrounded by billions of people and demons ,billions of ants that served their respective queens,being able to sacrifice their lives just to attain the goals given to them by the corporations.That was the world this girl belonged to.Where the fate of these that worked had no meaning to these for whom they worked,the rich felt that they're almighty god's who cannot be denied anything,corruption flourishes in these conditions,injustice prevails in the worlds ruled by the System.Lies and deceptions were used to bind and oppress souls.Like chains that were merely created for that purpose,and added thorns to tear into their hearts making them bleed.This created more pain,that slowly gathered as they were un-aware that it happened.That they were consumed from the inside,the things they believed were to nourish them actually slowly and gradually consumed them. This disastrous force was created by the lower instincts ,fueled by greed and lust.System oppressed everybody in that room,but only that girl,that journalist she alone was starting to understand this,how unpleasant it was,this was good for it marked the beginning of her salvation.These feelings of sorrow and sadness were God's gift to her,to allow her emotions to manifest,to free her from these shackles and allow to escape. She knew it finally,she was to run away try to leave this corporation world leave it all and seek freedom, a world that is better ,true paradise that was hidden deep below ,in the structures were Outcasts live and thrive. To escape to the world she knew nothing about,to a place that at first glance looks like hell,being unfriendly without luxuries,abandoned or dirty,were only criminals and terrorists hide from the reach of law,this was how these that opposed the system and its greed were portrayed by these monsters that thought they rule all,This is how I was viewed because I dared to speak against the wishes of the rich,you either become un-important or a terrorist,thats how this minority pretends to be a majority,in the world that ain't welcoming even for them.This reality that was created because of it,couldn't last forever and yet appeared to be very stable,this too was merely an illusion created in order to enslave living beings as long as it was possible,besides even if it fallen another place like this would only take its place. Thats how it was,this was how it would be unless a miracle would happen.But even a miracle doesn't last forever,this ain't places a paradise might be born, one must go into a journey to find it.But every journey,needs courage and has its own dangers,its not safe to travel,thats how it was always. The young journalist knew someone that loved to travel,he was her mentor one of the best journalists of his time,She was thinking about the



past years with him. They were the best in her life. She remembered every single time he helped her. "Rest in peace! I will never forget u!" she thought. The girl remembered this special person, he was just an ordinary man, one of these classical professionalists, that done this job because of his passion, she remembered the old brown trench coat. "I must pick up myself. I'm not a cry baby. I loved him but I can't change the fate" she thought, she slowly stood up, cleaning herself up, taking out a golden mirror from the pink arm back, gently correcting her make up, trying to smile, correcting her lips with her devilishly red lipstick. "Now I'm ready" she said breathing hardly looking around and observing how other crews handled the job, she saw how the dark haired man was frustrated and she decided to move in order to save her carrier. The people in the room were busy moving from one place to another, as on the stage the main event was being played out, she finally understood, that she needed to go out on that battle field, to fight this media war, for such was her fate, this was the existence she was born into, the girl or more exactly the woman matured in an instant, but was she up to that challenge? Meanwhile another hero of this parade was decorated by the corporate CEO, standing proudly on the stage being welcomed by cheers and flashes, the handsome young dark haired boy dressed in a red space suit with white boots, sparkly eyes, John was a normal teen who joined the army, now once he got out he realized that the world he used to know does not exist anymore. Everyone started to killing each other and war started in space, John looked at the gathered people and took the medal with some kind of disquiet, trying to conceal his feelings. He stood on the golden floor being cheered by the corporation's managers, that represented the world of greed, the cause of these wars and suffering he came closer to the classical design microphone and started speaking, but before he could do so a fat chubby CEO stood up and began his speech, "we all have witnessed the hostilities of the outside group" The man has started, looking at the gathered crowd, and then turning his attention to his comrade, a young looking woman with golden hair, dressed in red or pink corporate suit, who only closed her silver eyes, encouraging the chubby CEO to speak, "we all have seen it! Then why are we allowing it!! the outside world endangers our prospects and our future! these are facts! reports of sickness and uncontrolled mutations, gentlemen were standing on the brink of our destruction unless we won't eradicate the problem at once! such hives should be exterminated and area incorporated into domestic facilities, its resource should be used for the growth of our corporate empire! As it was revealed by my rating agency, the outcasts are the cause of our losses, parasiting on energy and other industries, they create disturbances in our activities, endangering and causing losses to our commercial reputation. These in turn produce defective results in our morality, enabling defective tendencies to spread. The so called world that borders with our facilities consists of ruined platform projects and criminal facilities, that lost their economic value long ago, therefore it was suggested by the group of commercial analysts to undergo with a revitalisation programme, removing the danger and sustaining growth. Let me make clear, Outcasts are not a nation or even a rebellious fraction as they themselves claim to be, they are a mixture of defective and renegade criminal operations, that are not controlled by any jurisdiction, we cannot allow this. These tendencies are the causes of wars, then we shall wage a preventive war, we assume that the outcasts will effectively disappear after the conclusion of our military operations in the area, we plan to revitalise the area and to incorporate its structures under our jurisdiction" explained the Chubby CEO getting applause from all fractions and the crowd, of this greedy corporate agglomeration. The

corporation planned to take over the platforms to expand,eliminating these that lived there or just happened to travel through them. The Outcasts in this case were everybody who didn't belong to the corporation that was representing the system in our case.But this also categorised these that were exiled,or choosed to leave the corporation,to try and live a better life. Now all these live hoods were targeted because they were poorer than the ones rulling the corporations. Everything that was different from the main establishment, was now beeing targeted because of their difference,because of a simple fact of not beeing categorized, system never wishes to acknowledge things that are too different from their greed based ideology.Pretending the other side does not exist or portraying it in a very negative manner. If it can it tries to exterminate freedom in all forms,because system is in fact a tyranny, a tyranny of rich that abuse the freedoms of the poor,enslaving them and forcing to work without receiving any pay,for these poor are slaves of the rich,there were always two social groups, THE MASTERS + and THE SLAVES - , outcasts were therefore always seen as slaves of these that lived in the system's wall's,these that thought of themselves of beeing masters,but were in fact slaves surviving more richer than themselves. That's why the CEO's ,considered it their duty to round up and catch the stray outcasts enslaving them. Using others for their personal gain,these were the kind that lived in the protection of this huge corporations walls.Ignorant individuals seeking attention,this was their true form,they would sell everyone just to become more powerful. To gather all wealth was their only purpose in existence,instead of distributing it among the needy ,they would keep all the resources for themselves until they no longer could be used ,that is the stupidity of these that are manipulated by greed,for when you have too much, this makes you too burdened,if you have too little this too is a burden,but if you have too much yet distribute it among these that don't have anything,than you get rid of the burden and gain able helpers,that will also protect what you have,think of it readers,analyze these words,beeing like the whores of the system is the stupid and most idiotic thing you can do,don't follow the path of greed it doesn't give any rewards. Did you know that simple grains,mashed up squished create flour ? this in turn mixed with water and baked makes bread. This is how by dividing or even diminishing one may achieve true success,everything that claims to be above is in reality below for the world we see is merely turned upside down.But we know everything from the beginning ,good is the opposite evil ,so everything portrayed as evil by the whores of the system is in fact good remember that !In this story the other enemies were these CEO'S and this too is a portrayal of evil ,that despite appearing to be weaker than Galamouth,might actually be more powerful and sinister,for this evil came from ignorance,from greed.The most dangerous kind of evil powers were gathered here,not in Galamouth's temple in fact ,Galamouth evil could be even considered as mockery,he only made an unrealistic thing happen,that wouldn't obstruct anything,the CEO's however planned to kill and murder all,for the sake of money,who's more evil the corporations leaders ? or Galamouth ? You don't have to answer yet . But can society be more evil than a single individual ? or is the all evil of the world only a work of individuals instead of the faulty ,societary values ?



## Chapter 1 „Awakening in the Space Heaven“

Gods are symbolisations of our desires that are given human form by spirit world called Echelion, in order to clearly understand this sentence we must throw away all the rationalisation created by the material world that engulphes us, like water in the ocean, making us fishes that swim beneath it. Not allowing us to see the image above the sea surface. We see the sky or a small fragment of it which we swimming in water cannot understand bound to the world that was covered in the water. This is the image created in our minds, that explains the complexity of the idea. Humans see a fragment of reality to which they're bound to, since that's what's necessary for most of them to exist, in fact showing them more than necessary might be destructive for them, and therefore there's a need for the barrier created by the surface of the water to divide both worlds and for us, it's Echelion the spirit world that connects our minds during sleep. This dimension is connected to us acting as a network combining all living beings into one and adding God to the equation. Of course this dimension connects more than just our mind, but being engulfed in this particular reality we cannot see the planes in which God's can be created. Because God's are symbolisations of our desires that are given human form by the Echelion to produce more desires or offer an explanation to the situation at hand, a form of communication that can be understandable for us and which enables our interaction with a reality different from our own. The diverse nature made the creation of spiritual tools a necessity, despite God being linked to everyone not everyone possessed the right qualities to understand him, another Gods and Goddesses were therefore created ones to represent Goodness others to represent Evil, and the world's ancient bipolarity was created as a means to communicate, testing and refining our spiritual potential and enabling us to grow in both worlds and understand what paths to take. On the true cross roads of life, that is our decisions and ideas everything we create into being, both the material and spiritual, even the spiritual collapse is in fact only another opening on life. We are constantly influenced by forces not many of us understand or even believe exist. I once written in the past that some might be terrified by the truth, by the way the world really looks, but they shouldn't be, do not be frightened by things you cannot understand in this world, cause it's just a matter of time and you will join life on that other plane, yes! There too exists life more real than you would ever believe, Echelion the ancient dimension that links to our dreams is in deed a very real place that existed and helped to shape the known Universe, in the ways not comprehensible to many scientists. Echelion predates even me it was created by God, it was his first creation that helps him to create new things and grants us the same power, Echelion is in fact the first spiritual tool ever created.

Now what if I told you, that you never ever existed in the material world? What if I told you that your true existence is somewhere else, in Echelion. Not possible? Are you really sure? You all experienced DEJAVU? if even for once in your life, you must have been stunned or even bewildered by this strange experience of a certain thing rewinding itself like as if it was a movie, or a game

world ? How many of you saw ghost figures for example ? Still thinking its a lie ? well you never know its to late to tell the truth from fiction, but you know.

The world presents itself in a certain manner and Echelion is a spiritual tool used to control everything, the birthplace of all creation ,everything could be said and some things in these descriptions must be repeated ,because saying it once wouldn't make you understand. Not a single thing would make sense if said once, sometimes important things need to be repeated constantly in order to be understood. Echelion is a depository of idea's, dreams and illusions ,consciousness and many more elements that reside between life and death, this is its role to block and suck in creative energies that could distort realities ,but can be used to give birth to other realities or even inventions and Idea's all beeing in the universe are linked into a network of minds ,without even knowing we can communicate or catch a glympse of distant worlds that exist far beyond our normal reach, or even influence events there becoming God's of the Afterlife or influence other dimension's civilisations into development. Therefore Humans too can become God's and are whorshiped by civilisations that do not know the truth. Imagine the whole picture, see beyond you're limitations !! Humans and God's are a like , they are created from the same matter and become different and yet the same during their evolutions. To understand this !! To grasp the whole Idea, humanity too in a far advanced future will become God's in fact my tale of Megacivilisation is a vision from a very distant future, one possible path , Earth's and other intel stellars super powers development might take Billion of Eons of years in the future from the year you read or listen to my tale. This story can become the truth as time goes on and billion of eons years pass such is the power of a creative mind enchanced by the visions influenced by God and Echelion, that time itself does not exist ,once a beeing is swallowed by the Abyss of Echelion time travel and multi dimensional ventures are in deed a real possibility. In this far advanced future I opened my eyes having slept for 456 Earths hours, seeing the greyish darkness of an futuristic degraded apartment ,my eye sight became clear after just few minutes and I saw the green mold occupying the sealing for thousand or more years this place was desolated, empty and a bit dirty as I slowly got off from a futuristic bed and looked around. It was very quiet the rectangular room was abandoned full of graffiti's that were painted during different time periods ,there were mostly red ,or multi colored signs that occupied the white gloomy walls of the never finished futuristic complex that was supposed to become a multi trade corporation, but bancrupted because of the intergalactic stock exchange and became abandoned a safe Heaven for us outcasts that are rejected everywhere by the corporative, industrial societies, Outcasts mostly consist of poor workers that lost their jobs when suddenly big universal corporative complexess go bancrupt, but also consist of refuges that escape dominated planets or criminals described as Space Pirates who also recruit from our people it also includes me as this is my society, I too am an Outcast. Some graffiti's however can become inspirational as the same white walls shown an incredible painting that if it was made in the closed rich societies would be considered an piece of art but instead was to be labelled as mere vandalism ,it showed a man walking a yellow desert in the darkness above him a white pigeon was flying symbolising freedom to these that are now oppressed an incredible and outstanding way to give hope to these that are said to lost all hope, I was marvelled by this sudden discovery, as I streached my arms and looked at my grey outfit yawning a bit I oppened my black arm bag and took out a mini digital device photographing the painting and than by pressing on the screen sending it instantly to billions of my comrades that added

me as a friend in one of the Universe's Social network, smiling and answering the comments of different people, demons and angels from all over the universe !! I didn't know all of them but they too were my friends. I talked to them on the social site answering their concerns, while watching some television and checking the download progress on that one space fight movie I so wanted to see but never had the chance or the guts to visit the corporate Cinema's, that's why I used the „Illegal” way that was much more closer to my status as an disgusting terrorist and criminal. This only shown to me that despite the walls created by the official Authorities, people, demons and Angels of different races that existed in the universe wished to communicate and develop relationships with each other, some of them make it even to the real world and our „official” lives. All the while closely monitoring the official media's and their propaganda sometimes laughing hardly from their idiocy, not knowing what dangers would be released because of that, I didn't even suspect my calm moments were gonna to pass and I'll be involved in a fight sooner than expected and on a much more grander scale. After few whiles I hid the device, needing to move and to get involved I stood on the floor and moved to the exit entering a very dark and rusted corridor, walking slowly constantly keeping my eyes open for an enemy that could lurk in the shadows. Life of an Outcast isn't an easy one we live in a world, left to fend for ourselves and fighting is a skill that can become useful as we venture the darkness of these space heavens, where no law and no authorities only the law of the strongest is obeyed in the world lived by poor behind the walls created by rich. I moved slowly in this seemingly un-ending rusted corridor, scanning for any trace of aura that could suggest there are others in the area, and in deed this place wasn't abandoned there were many life forms present some monsters, other human or demonic, rarely you could meet some Guardians or angels this meeting however mostly involves a battle as they're sent here to fight Demons and I was a demon. The Eternal war is an never ending strife between the forces of good and evil however not always the good occupies the right seat, as in many cases the real Good was seen here and not in the world of the rich who call themselves to be just and good, but are only liars, cowards and the cause of the most evil that falls on this eternal metropolis. There was a glim golden light that covered the hallways I was walking on, signifying that electricity was still delivered at least some small amount that was made by the bankrupted corporation electric generators it was very quiet deviously making this place feel abandoned. The floor was made of glass like material and covered by a molden synthetic probably red carpet. The place was a bit dirty and rusty as it really was abandoned for thousand or even few thousands years. Some noises were heard carried by the echo going through the walls metallic sounds, telling me of a battle that took place on floors above me, the complex shook a bit as the battle must have been massive, yet it wasn't the one that was to be waged by the rich on us, this one was rather a very simple battle between two space pirate groups that waged their wars. Sometimes bystanders could fall a victim to it and that's why most kept away, anyways it wasn't something that interested me as I entered the stairway and made my way down hoping to find the way out, hopefully get out the same way I entered few hundred or more hours before. We the outcasts use these abandoned places to hide from the Corporations that would use us as slaves, some are wanted criminals sometimes because they dared to stand up against the rich and once captured might even face execution, some are very powerful demons or wanderers, like me that travel from place to place ignoring the official world that denies our existence, or makes us look as evil, insane

monsters.

Our lives were a bother for these that thought of themselves as masters of this highly advanced world. It was quiet as I made my way slowly stepping down on the dark, marble stairs looking at the red or silver walls that seemed to shine in every possible colors that could be imagined by my mind. Looking at the darkness below, I wondered about my path, will I visit worlds covered in eternal darkness? Or will I see planets that bath in sun light trying to remember the Gardens of Lilith I saw 75 years ago during Galamouth's awakening. I really didn't suspect that event was only a prelude to something even more eventful an event that will gather all humanity, eternals and God's into an incredible warfare. For now it was awfully quiet, calm before the storm. I slowly walked slowly observing the surroundings everything could happen just about now, in this precise moment everything was possible. The sound of pure void interrupted only by some metallic sounds, given an incredibly chilling atmosphere to this venture deep down into unknown as I went down floor after floor looking at the rectangular circle's the staircases made and how well attached they were to the metallic or glass like walls all thanks to the ancient engineers that made this complex, thousand or more probably few thousands years ago it's an incredible thing to venture these modern ruins, rediscovering their secrets. It was both a very dangerous and yet a very secure place where no authority or rule could disturb the natural decay of this place, envisioned like other structures to become temples of commerce that would contain entire world instead became, a decaying shelters from all oppression. Remnants of worlds and mini structures that were to house billions now were used by these, that had no home and were forced into eternal exile. Here they all could feel safe and secure, at least till the rich and money hungry whores decide to destroy even these sanctuaries, like in ancient scriptures these that had all in deed had all and these that had none had even less, the universal division that not always would be just but couldn't be changed, because the only way to have something is to take it away from someone or to be given that from someone that has more, both ways strictly forbidden by these that were to rule over entire galaxies, yet some having been blessed by God could go above these sick rules and restrictions. Giving out freely without losing anything the universe's best known paradox and yet possible because this world was an illusion just like everything else. I was still going down into the darkness hearing all the metallic noises that came from above, wondering as they become louder a bit, will these noises bring the battle to me, I wanted to avoid unnecessary troubles, but wouldn't avoid it if it came towards me, how many times my adventures would begun just like that?

At this moment of time it was quiet as I looked both ways and then returned slowly going down my way to the exit, to the platforms. To the shining metropolis were all stories would begun or end. To state the truth, I was hoping for some time to rest from both my mental and physical injuries, although I was invincible just a year ago before the events of this story I lost a major battle, with fellow outcasts like my self, we waged ourselves into a battle against the system trying to cause a huge rift in its financing and security industries. The Banking platforms Estelta were our targets, the battle plan was organised 30 years before initial operations begun, we had a well organised strategy and a leader full of charisma the legendary Rick Korranis, warlord and criminal that controlled entire finances in the Pax-Suitessa galaxy, probably he too was a part of the system, yet most of us saw in this a way to put a thorn in the society we detested and make some money of course, So we gathered into the army, created an organisation and were given our respective roles, I joined relatively late only 5 years ago and

perhaps my true potential wasn't recognized , I was assigned into one of the armies lead by our generals in the lower ranks, In that „day” we attacked the left wing of the corporational building X-894-23 Jevetta enterpraises , along with groups 1987 and 2003 of the C ranked space fleets ,which were to gain control of petrolium and electro fuels necessary for our operations, Yet the corporate Armies combined with the Guardians of Megacivilisation ,and security fleets and armies from allied solar systems ,quickly gained an advantage in the major corporations and came after our groups. Battle lasted for over 1367 hours and caused irreversable damage to our ranks and morals, we were even labelled as rats by the official media's and the humiliating defeat, combined with the loss of some of my most precious comrades from the organisation, left a very deep wound despite my powers I couldn't interfere with the natural flow of life and death, Alpha and Omega strickly forbidden me explaining that it was a planned failure , that our leader was a traitor hired by my enemy the system, to make fun of us and criminilize all the poor. Alpha and Omega told me that it was a stupid mistake for me to join their ranks, that it was naive to think this could be acomplished. I made a terrible mistake in my jugment beeing decieved by the system into believing this huge well organised army was an army and not just an institutionalized slaughter house, a way of exterminating these that were unnecessary my Goddess Alpha and Omega assured me that it wouldn't make any difference if I wouldn't get involved, even if I wamed them in advance knowing the truth only few could be safed, yet I think I could save my friends atleast instead of joining a false and stupid idiological group , I should have taken them away from this nightmare and not just watch them die , this mistake hunted me from that time it was a terrible thing to bear. These thoughts couldn't just go away, despite the fact I wanted them to leave me alone to just forget about it all I was suppose to be above , why than I felt guilty and concerned about the way this world and every other was developing? Evil was hard to defeat and I wondered whether I too am Evil or Good , I guess I was both Evil and Good depending on the time , after all sometimes I could be very selfish.Despite my pact with God giving me powers that were unbelievable , I too had my limitations and knowing my borders wasn't a nice experience,but could be very helpfull in understanding my self and regaining my balance it was yet another lesson given by the master of all knowledge God even thought I would sometimes curse him , this was suppose to be recieved and learned because it was my fate, despite I created it myself it wasn't always under my control , not all consequence's might be forseen. Not all can be planned sometimes we are suprised pleasantly, sometimes the surprise is negative but its all caused either by our or someone else's actions. Therefore its good to know you're enemy even better than friends, yet what to do if you're enemy is the structure ? like Society or the System that controls societies ? My adventures are never simple, Im always bound with issues that go deep into the surface of this world indeed for me to find a solution, complex situations must be understood only that way I can reach and punish this stories true enemies, but sometimes they tend to manifest by themselves in front of me.I was reaching the lower parts of this dark stair case monitoring an aura that jumped very fastly towards my current position , something was coming close and will manifest soon, What was it ?I wondered trying to guess the nature of this aura it had so much energy like a sparkle an unique encounter.A girl slowly made her way down the steps, as a soft gust of wind came blowing in. she brushed her pink hair aside letting out a sigh, It was another boring day here. she thought to herself, trying to figure out what she could do . Since all her actions has its restrain under watches of many. She didn't



have much freedom, shrugging and picking up her pace. Making her way down to the lower part of the dark stair case. Looking further down, she saw a slightly tall figure there. titling her head and start to aproach the figure. The figure which was me as I looked behind and noticed the girl, smiling a bit and wondering what could I do with her. The gust of wind mixed with the metalic sounds giving a very chilling atmosphere.

„Who goes there ?” I decided to speak hoping that she will reply , in a known language ,looking at the girl and trying to figure out from what race or planet she camed from. Smiling and walking a bit forward hoping such a beauty won't become my enemy.She slowly walk down uppon hearing me talking, as She bought her hood down and said "Dawn here? And you are?" She tried to look at the figure, which was approaching closer to her. Smiling I came very close , looking at her face . The girl had a dark skin with beautifull long pink hair,dressed in somekinda rebel fashion. I tried to look innocently.

„My name is Blaze Master and Im a wonderer....what are you doing all alone in a place like this” I said laughting a bit trying to make my self trustable. We standed looking at each other in this darkness surrounded by the colorfull futuristic walls. In the abandoned complex on this stair case ,in the middle of my path to the exit.She stared at me from head to toe, feeling that I was alittle trustable but still with doubts. She nodded, "Oh, A wonderer. Just trying to get out of some crowds." She said with a slightly hint of sadness. As she glances back at me, wondering if she could kill some time here. I on the other hand was suprisd by her sadness ,wondering why her voice had a sorrowfull tone. Standing confidently althought beeing a bit perplexed still not knowing whether she can be trusted or not. „Wanna come with me ?” I finally asked the question, hoping she would join and fom an alliance with me. Of course I had other intentions as well my mind was full of pervy thoughts and the girl herself looked rather atractive.

She tilt her head from side to side, thinking of my offer. She chuckled and said, "If you could ever get me out of this boring place then." She smirk alittle, and thinking to herself, Things are going to be more fun like this. But still she had to be careful, not knowing what my real intentions were. I too needed to be cautious ,but the girl appeared to be safe ,she wouldn't cause problems wasn't even powerfull enought to hurt me, it would be better to form a team as we walked down towards Megacivilisation ,and perhaps this relationship would even last for a while I thought to my self „Ok let's go... there's a battle upwards and they might come here, we wouldn't want to be caught in theire mess now would we ?” I smirked a bit and walked forward letting her follow me ,we slowly stepped down on the rusty stairs listening to the metalic sounds coming from above. The sounds told us about the intensivity of the Space-Pirate's battle that was in progress ,it made me think so I turned my head towards her „so tell me are you a pirate as well ? Im a traveler , a Nomad. There's not much I can really say about my self hehe” I laughted trying to keep the flow of information to minimum , but expecting her to tell me a bit more about herself to gain an advantage.A battle eh, she thought to herself. "But battles are fun" She said, while easily catching up with me. She skipped her way down as she jump on the metal staircase, making a loud sound. She smiles, "I ain't really a pirate, just a normal girl." I smiled and laughted a bit hearing the loud noise „yea I can see that haha a pirate would know we need to keep quiet ok” I explained and grabbed gently her hand as we continued walking down in this darkness. I looked at the girl and was ready to believe her explanation, thats true she could be a ordinary girl that got mixed up in all of this because she wanted to see the

forbidden world. People and demons living inside the established orders walls , knew our world only from myths and legends ,considering this place to be full of different kinda romantic adventures ,they leave their safety behind and embark on the journey becoming outcasts, only after reaching this place they realize the horrible truth and while some are glad to know the truth the others resent it wishing to return back to their comfortable lives not realizing the choices they made are irreversible. For these that dare to defy the system will forever become outcasts and shall be portrayed as criminals. Its the truth these that are locked inside the system are unaware ,believing of themselves to be free while being slaves, and thinking they have become slaves in our world while they attained freedom, they simply do not realize how fabricated knowledge in their world is. Therefore I was ready to believe the girl that walked with me slowly ,that she's just an ordinary girl, correction she was an ordinary girl but no longer is ,because now she will become special only will she realize why she's special ?and what being special really means? „So are you a run away dear ?” I asked the girl smirking „You entered a very dangerous place you know” I continued to tease her, enjoying her childish naivete. She puffed her cheeks as she continued to follow me, "I just prefer to be noisy." As she heard the words Run away, she starts to think about her past. She couldn't remember much of what she really was, or where she came from. Only remembering being here, with a blank mind as many people starts coming in and out of her lives and often unfriendly glares from many. "I don't really remember.. Eh dangerous place?" she said as she followed close to me. This response made me curious making me realize there was another interesting mystery and I so loved them! but I had to cut it short hearing a huge loud noise ,grabbing the girls hand quickly „Lets Run !!” I yelled as the staircase started to shake we quickly rushed down and made our way into the nearest hall while the staircase itself collapsed filling the hall we were in with black and grey smokes ,the cloud entered it as we fallen on the floor with me quickly covering her back while the smoke rushed over me. It was amazing because the whole event took merely few seconds !! Huge metallic and glass staircase collapsed in merely few seconds ,echoing throughout the whole building making me look at the girl and smile „looks like will have to find another way out” I said to the girl while we lied on the red floor hearing the loud tumbling sound of metallic stairs and broken glass that suddenly collapsed. Obviously it was thanks to some explosion, these things happened regularly in such places, thats why it was both hard to get in and get out. I stood and helped the girl to stand up as we both looked at the place we found ourselves in a rusty corridor gently brightened by red light. Despite seeing me lending a hand to help her stand up, she chuckled and got up on her feet by herself while sticking out her tongue at me. As she look at the mess being created again, "These things are getting to often already." She said while eyeing around the area, as a red light shone. „ain't all battle fields like that ?” I asked looking at her and then added „but there is something to it, something definitely is up in the air...I can feel it” looking at the rusty corridor which now was covered in a greyish debris, I didn't know what was yet to come, I looked at the girl who was still teasing me scratching my head being a bit confused by her cheerful personality. She nodded, "Yeah, the long battles always are." She look around as the cloudy air came rolling in, and she look back at the guy who was staring at her. As a sudden chill of air came rushing in, her smile began to fade while letting a soft growl to slip out of her mouth. I smirked and looked at the girl „oh you finally noticed ?” I teased her a bit and then got serious „Hey mister its about time you introduced yourself” demanding in a calm manner looking at the figure.

She rolled her eyes and chuckles "Of course i did." While glancing back at the figure, and tilt her head. "I wonder if its gonna be fun." she said. „oh sure you did it uhum tell me why don't I believe you" I continued to tease her and than walked towards the man „well how long we have to wait ?" asking again trying to analize the mysterious new comer, beeing pretty much sure a fight would begun now. The figure slowly walk closer to me and as he ruffles his messy brown hair and glances me from head to toe he than start to move closer, "Hey do you know something?" He said while pulling his collar, " I am actually gay" He stated. Suddenly I moved back realizing the danger I found my self in at the moment „OH FUCK !!! Listen Dawn we gotta run , RUN FAST !!!" I grabbed her hand quickly rushed into the distance running in the mysterious corridor full of different complex paths ,hoping we could loose this homo pervert somewhere in this mysterious maze of different rusted corridors. while Dawn merelly blinked as she ran off with me, looking back and waving to the homo, "It was nice to meet you, I love people like you tooo." Dawn shouted while running off with me .This place was full of doors and different entries. It was suppose to be an office quarters for the luxury service workers and office people , there were even computer devices installed and standing on the futuristic glass desks waiting to be finally used, big servers rusted for over millenia's a true treasure house for us as I smiled once we entered one of these offices and closed the glass doors,I quickly walked over to the office desk and looked into the desks finding some mini computer devices which I hid in my bag , giving few of them to Dawn.I secured her loyalty.

„we hit the jack pot Dawn,with these we can make money on the black market dear ,scatter the office for everything you can find" I explained my self walking over the huge safe trying to break its code.She saluted tome and chuckled, "Okay~ Captain." She then went off with the mini devices and begin to place it around anything she saw. While I sit down near the green rusty safe and took out another portable computer ,plugging it with a grey grey while into the numeric keyboard on the safe and waiting a while while the program send some signals into the safe's security systems After putting away all the mini devices, She then walk towards me while seeing me doing my job. She bend down near the safe and took out a device as a small but strong sparkle came from the tip of it. She smile and said, "Save the trouble, wanna zap it instead?" making me laught as she obviously didn't know the infrastructure „No if you do that...all the interface will go hi wire and I want to retrieve the lock as well, do you know how much you can get for these kinda locks? thats a huge ammount of points!! I bet the safe stores just you're average gold for some financial transactions , why waste the prize for something trivial as Gold? well its worth much only in either ancient or border worlds but its not easy to get there hehe" I answered laughting waiting for my device to do its stuff. looking around and getting a glimpse of the office that wasn't ever used ,currently the structure was dirty full of rust and dirt but you could see some remnants of its once sterile cleanless in the way all the office gadgets were placed , a structural order ,not even once used. Not a single transaction was calculated by this office's advanced software ,its unbelievable that all this hard work went to waste,but it was a good hunt for us who live as scavengers collecting items that were never used , trading them to these that willed to get them,but didn't want to go to the System's dealers. The Office room was huge with about 67 or 45 desks with huge holographycall libraries I looked at Dawn and smiled while making my self clear „Look around there's many Items you can use for yourself or sell ...go get as many as you can, you won't get another chance like that, get on a move!!!" I ordered.She heed my explaintion

and just simply nodded her head, as she walk around the deserted office, she wander around aimlessly and look around for any stuff that caught her attention. She sighed, as she look into her bag. A bag that was full of equipments and money, she shrugged and look around once again. My device finally beeped and I turned the safe's handle opening and revealing gold bars inside with some black binary equipment, taking it all from the inside and putting it into my bag, analysing the four black mini computer devices that resembled a notepad having a screen interface, I turn one of them to analyze its compacity and was overjoyed at the processing speed. „uranium powered commercial tablets with refrontia's CPU's, our luck amazes me, Dawn what you got?“ I looked at the girl as she was scavenging for some usefull utilities. The office was poorly lightened up, the earlier described rust made an awkward combination with green syntetic floor, some units were still working making a buzzing sound. The atmosphere of this place was unique, a chilly combination, the smell of death filled the area. I passed some futuristic desks observing their designs, they were white with nano technology built in, these desks themselves were actually computers units. Impressive technology made by the servants of the system for the servants of the system.

Definetly not something that was to be analyzed by a mere Outcast such my self, the desks were bordered by a golden light, which in fact was its transmitter if the device would work properly it could transmit over gigadoits of informatin in mere seconds all over the galaxy. The air was dusty a bit as I walked towards a huge window from which the Megacivilisation could be seen, marvelled by its size, all districts looked like tiny dots, white lights, yellow, red, orange all the colors of the rainbow could be found there. We were so above this eternal utopia that we couldn't even see a single human instead lights, created by buildings or spaceships, looking as tiny golden bugs creating a colony. Its suprising how humans and bugs are alike, both create colonies in which they dwell and if the colony dies not a single one of them might survive. The eternal darkness that engulfed both the inside's of the building in which we were as well as the outside, the eternal remainder of how far we got in our development, that there's no longer any limits for the societies to grow and thrive. Even for me the one that supposedly hates all societies this thought gived some mixed feelings, was it good or bad? that the society developed the way it did? Was the question that occupied my mind for the most of the time. I turned my attention to my comrade slowly making my way to her, to see what she got. She then held up a couple of couputer chips and all, "And the main one is this!" She said as she held up her hand; a mini robot rat. It begin to move on her hand, as she chuckle. "I made this my own, theres alot of gadgets here." she added.

Looking at her and smiling, I actually wondered what she wanted to do with them. Actually it was just my curiosity, because the girl amazed me, she was always cheerfull and it was quiet, the entire building was terribly quiet, while only moments later one might hear these metallic sounds. „It got awfully quiet, didn't it? I wonder whats gonna happen next“ I said looking at her gadgets and smiling „nice trophies“ I added teasing her a bit, looking at the sealing I noticed a blue energy wave that was visible on it, the energy wave was passing it like a blue lighting. It was a very interesting and odd phenomena „wonder what that was?“ I asked Dawn showing her the blue lighting, that dissapeared after few seconds.

She puff her cheeks, and show the mini rat closer to me. "So it can bite you~ Besides this chips has alot of unusal metal in it." She said while glazing out upon the blue lightning, "Seems strong.." ... Unusually strong, like a magical current

weird, why use magic in a commercial complex?" I added ignoring the rat and looking at the rainbow colored walls, seeing how the colors on the walls created a different mosaic responding to different colorful energies that emanated from both the desks and floors. „this building is built from a very peculiar structure, did you notice that the walls' colors change all the time?" I asked again looking at the girl very carefully. She tilted her head and looked at me, "It does sometimes? Depending on how much the energy is." She said while feeling proud. As the rat nibbled around her hand and making a semi loud squeal sound. "See even ratty feels that I am smart." She said while patting his back. Making me smile as I continued the conversation „Is that a summoner, or just a normal pet?" asking about the animal, that I didn't notice before. The rat appeared only recently making it our newest team member. While I wonder about Dawn's magical abilities, usually pirates or people living in industrial complexes are well versed in technology but it's rare for them to know advanced magical arts. Unless someone well versed in them taught it to them. Slow tumbling sounds were heard in the structure, the walls were warm, making sounds comparable to the flow of boiled waters, perhaps it was this structure's heating systems. Perhaps we dealt with an advanced magical engineering. She smiles and said, "It might be but then it might not, So I don't know~" chuckles while a grin creeps on her face. Suddenly the doors are broken making the glass fall on the floor, as we notice four tall dark armored figures walking into the office through the glass doors, while me, the rat and finally Dawn hide under one of the desks. The dark knight walks slowly, their dark red eyes gazed from beneath their hoods. Their dark armors were made from some magical metal, crafted to resemble stereotypical human knights' armors. They took out their swords and started to destroy the desks, breaking them into pieces. „cleaning squad?" I asked whispering as we looked at the desks being broken with incredible strength. The rat quickly crawled back into Dawn's jacket due to the loud sound, as she looked out, "A rough squad indeed." she said. „get ready Dawn, we must take them down" I confirmed and jumping from under the desk, tried to attack the one that was closest to me, who instantly turned towards us blocking my punch with his sword, making it light itself all green and suddenly a flash thrown me away followed by explosions, that came from under the floor, making me hit the wall, as I quickly pushed my hands forward creating a whirlpool out of air, that attacked two knights pushing them down. The other two quickly jumped to me as I barely in time crawled out of the hole created by me hitting the wall. The colorful wall was cut in half and shattered into pieces, as their swords glowed red. She quickly gets up, in front of me and kicks the two knights away while jumping on one of their shoulders and grabbing hold of its head and ripping it. Stealing away its sword and smashes it into the knight's eyes slowly stops glowing so does the sword. While I used this opportunity and crushing another knight's dark armor inserted my hand inside it, gathering my energy, releasing it inside making the knight explode, shattering the knight into pieces. The remaining two jumped far away and stabbed their swords into the floor making it purple as suddenly we felt our energy was being drained. The draining began to be intense making me quickly jump towards the two knights and slash them with my energy sword I created, breaking them in half and ensuring the drain had stopped I looked at Dawn smiling. „it's over dear, come out" I walked over towards her and smiled.

She tilted her head as she starts to approach me, while touching her jacket and tickling her rat. „you really like this little one" I expressed smiling seeing how the girl happily played with her pet „don't let your guard thought, the summoner is

still here hiding somewhere" I warned Dawn while my self scouting the area ,for any trace's of enemy's aura. „who ever behind this is doing a good job" I expressed yet again looking at the devastated office ,kneeling near some knights remains taking into my possession a golden plate with the eye of the beholder erected into it. „someone has a thought out knowledge of the things in this world" I expressed yet again looking at the golden shiny plate, reading the ancient symbols that constituted the spell that was used to construct these knights, they werent normal summoners, but dimensional spirits given a holly armor a feat of magic only a very skilled dark force user could use. Suddenly a lighting flashed brighting up the officee as a girl appeared in front of the window and a dark knight that attacks the girl. She fells to the ground unconscious while me and Dawn tried to kill the knight . When she awoke violently took the knife and kill the knight and then licked the blood from her wounds. I walked towards the new girl looking at her smirking „ok now who the hell are you ?" I asked while trying to make my self look cold and very powerfull, not knowing whether the new comer was our enemy or a new ally. Dawn tilted her head as she glance at the new girl and back to me than simply shrugged her shoulders, "Are you alright?" she asked the girl. I walked to her as well while pushing Dawn out of the way ,looking back at her and giving her a sign to fall back „be carefull Dawn ,this girl was the one that summoned these knights, but here's a mystery why did the knights attack her?" I wondered and later understood the new girl didn't control her powers yet. „Oh, my head" said the girl as she saw the corpses of the Knights. Then she threw the knife down and frightened away „M-m-my name is Misa and I losted while looking for land of demon souls , then I saw that the knights attack you and I can help you." she answered as Dawn puffed her cheeks, "Or maybe she just drop by?" She said, while looking the girl again. Making me laught while kneeling down to this new girl and healing her wounds ,closelly observing her body I was a bit astonished at my findings and looked back at Dawn „Ey Dawn can I look at you're body" I smiled. „Misa did you meet anyone in the land of demons souls ?" I asked Misa while walking closer to Dawn and looking at her body finding the same symbols on the bodies of both girls. „well there's surely a mystery to be unraveled here" I proclaimed sitting on the floors looking at the two girls curiously. Dawn tickled the rat while looking at me, "See I told you so." And quickly tuming to Misa as she raise my hand towards her, "Nice to meet ya." she said while smiling. Misa arose from the floor, took the knife again, smiled and said " and to me is nice to meet you" I looked at both sighting „But I was right too, the girls body was forced to summon the knights while she herself was in somekinda trance...did you know you have dark alchemy symbols on you're bodies ? you were experimented on ,can you recall how did you find yourself here ? both of you ?" I looked at the girls curious about the answers she could give me ,while it was awfully quiet the redish smoke was gone now and everything looked very calm. Meanwhile Misa again noticed that a bloodthirsty knight approached, without saying a word she grabbed the knife and cut the knight in two parts. „calm yourselves and they will stop appearing" I smiled to Misa as the knight slowly evaporated to dust „they're here to protect you Misa ...you're the one creating them" I explained looking at the girl with amusement as she fought off her creations. Dawn glance at us as she settle down on desk, "I am just a normal girl~" She said while sighing. „you might have been a normal girl, but you both were experimented on by powerfull alchemists, look around .This sky scraper is in reality a magical complex structure that was to emulate a normal industry complex ,someone created this building for a reason and made it abandoned to have it appear as a ruin in which outcasts

dweell...now my question is why ? Whats going on ? and the only thing I know is that you two somehow hold in yourselves the keys to understanding this mystery" I explained looking at Dawn and than back at Misa.when Misa looked at me and Dawn her vampire's eyes were blood red ,felling that she haven't hardly any forces,Misa looked at ghostly silver moon and she said "i want blood". And then evaporated and went near a haunted castle.Then she entered the palace and the faltering ghost until she saw a vampire who puts it about to come to her. She followed him finally could not resist and started to drink blood from him. then appeared the other vampires and attacked Misa. She screamed and tried to kill them, but the vampires were too much however she took a strong knife and killed them in the most cruel way .Then she laughed.We looked curiously as Misa dissapeared and I quickly grabbed Dawns hands „Dawn we need to get out now !! Someone's called her back which means they know were here and not part of whatever they're doing!!!!" I explained quickly to Dawn.As she tugged my hand, "But what about Misa? We got to help her right?" she said quickly. I sighted and looked at her a bit sadly , I was worried about Misa as well but were also aware of the danger her unstable state caused „I cannot trace her existence anywhere its as if she evaporated or entered back to Echelion,we cannot follow her it would be to dangerous, and if she appears she might be brainwashed" I explained.Dawn pouted, "But she is still apart of us, besides it would be ok." She sniffed the air alittle, "She seems near though, lets go." Meanwhile the floor was beeing encrypted with dangerous explosive spells while heroglyphic images were visible appearing even in the office we were standing, the magical bombs were armed. „you know where she is ?" I asked her suprisd as the situation started to get serious. Hoping that this situation would resolve quickly, our time was running away. On the floors in the corridors outside the office green pentagrams and symbols appeared. The spells interface warned about an impending explosion giving us only 10 minutes of time, the action should be imminent, if there was any action possible. The symbols that appeared in different colors were also visible in the office some of them were : The Eye of Beholder, Dancing tribal man with spheres, Three circles the symbols of olympiade, and symbolisations of druggs and medicine. A propable message from God himself who used this spell's interface to communicate with us ,perhaps give a warming and a thought that hallowed my head as if Alpha were speaking to me. In fact it was her voice which said this inside my head „you're not aware of what you're hands can create" I looked at my hands quickly and closed my eyes offering a prayer to God. Intensivelly concentrating on things that my hands could create,moving them forward golden springs came out of them, wenting right into the next dimension and entangling Missa ,quickly pulling them back we saw a dark hole opening and Misa fall out of it. „are you all right ?" I asked her.Dawn nodded her head as she threw some light blue powder over the spell, "This ought to stop it awhile." She said while pulling me out of her way. The spells indeed stopped and everything returned to normal for a while, I kneeled down towards Misa and took her into my arms ,holding her firmly I waked out the office. „incerdible you stopped the spells, lets move fast" We rushed out of the corridors and into the maze hoping to escape.Dawn then followed me,as we quickly entered the maze. "I will led you." Dawn said as she took the lead and quickly made her way out of the place. Making me run behind her while holding Misa who started to awake „you know this Maze ?" I asked a bit suprisd while loud noises were heard behind us and the floor shook,the bombs went off according to plan on the nearby coorridors and we barelly avoided the flames ourselves, as the maze started to explode ,the walls crumbled making us go right throught

them as dark myst filled everything. "Maybe, Maybe not." Dawn just simply sighed as she pull us quickly out managing to get out of this maze while a gust of wind came while the surrounding turned dusty. The wind itself was very black and made an awfull roar, pushing all of us into the walls as I while holding Misa followed Dawn slowly, energy waves were released forcing us to duck as the blue waves roamed the area. Misa without saying anything lead us through the maze towards safety and soon we got out safely ,with combined efforts of Dawn and Misa we found ourselves entering another staircase and ducking down, as the floor finally exploded enabling us to see the bloody orange flames, and feel the enbarable heat I looked at Dawn smiling exhausted „we barelly made it” I admitted petting Dawn on her head. „lets go” I commanded walking down the silver stairs looking into the darkness and the golden walls that surrounded us. This made me wonder yet again about the place we were in, It was very dark with only stairs and walls shining while we walked awfully slowly carefully observing the enviroment. The sounds of the explosion overwhelmed everything and as we rushed we also allowed ourselfs to witness this spectacle created by an enoumous pressure combined with massive acceleration of heat and literal decomposture of the metals used to build the floor ,making the floor collapse as we witnessed the schockwave that went throught the entire building spreading the heat which was sucked in by the walls preventing the collapse of this structure. The metalic glass structure literary decomposed to atoms ,in a way that was simply to hard to describe, nothing like the things anyone of you ever saw.

Meanwhile above our current location in the depths of this mysterious sky scraper something evil was prepared. A tiny figure similiar to a three year old child dressed in dark monk like cloth was standing in front of medicore cauldron, which produced somekinda blue smoke. Enchanting spells he was observed by two priest like figures, two old man dressed in both dark and white priest like clothing holding silver canes. With huge white beards that almost touched the grey floor. The man dressed in dark regal cloths slowly pointed his silver cane forward making the area full itself with blue smoke creating incredible whirlpools, which started to come into the silver hals thrusting and encircling them as the demon that looked like a three year old child danced performing a very serious and powerfull dark spell, creating lightings and tiny self sustained explosions. Suddenly the structure exploded as collums started appearing. Growing out of the silverly grey floor, breaking it destroying the golden wals as the White dressed old man waving his silver cane created a silver barrier protecting the three of them, a huge explosion leveled the floor that was located at the top of this sky scraper making the dark whirlpools clean the debry in few seconds creating place for an ancient temple that was beeing placed, Galamouth's temple that was located in echelion was beeing brought by them into the sky scraper fusing itself with it as red lightings modeled the reality, Galamouth was seen observing his fathfull survens from above on his golden throne. Both the white dressed man and the dark dressed man had golden ornaments on their cloths these were the proof of their alliagiance to the Dark Lord and his evil ambition they slowly walked to the stairs and kneeled down giving his respect to their master who with his faitfhull shadow birds at the head of his throne observed them from above. Dressed in terryfingly dark cloths with golden serpent like ornaments he moved his hands forward and arose from his seat „Let the celebrities of live and Death begun !! My faitfhull survents ,we begin our march towards renewall of this world. Darkness and



deception created by the lust has reached its culmination ! requiring our assistance in rectifying the sins of these that lived before us !! Human folly has created a place without any proportions, desires of many is mocked by these that dared to take God's place !!! it is time to remind them that no one can escape the terrible powers of death....we shall open the path to self exploration!! destroying the forms that rotted over eons of years ,this is the time !! to take stand against everything that was created by decay. Human and eternal worms must be extinguished in order to prepare room for the new to rise ....LET THE DANCE OF THE ETERNALS FINALLY BEGUN !!!" he proclaimed sitting on his golden throne as above him billions of eyes opened in the dark ceiling, these eyes looking as if they were watching from another dimension opened to document the tragedy that was to be begun. The two men stood up and the white dressed man walked two steps forward bowing down in respect „my master, the rising star of darkness we are ready to perform all the duties requested by your desire ,this holy structure created for you by our magic will become the instrument of your divine will...my master we are waiting for your blessings take charge in shaping this new world" The white dressed man kneeled down on the golden steps „you did a great honor constructing this special instrument of my will, White Master ...Dark Master , Enblemo I give you my blessings to carry out this divine task...Go forward my faithful man ,Go Forward !! carrying the task that is required by the Universe !! let no one stop you ,let no one become a diversion in these tasks !!only a swift conclusion will make the world tremble !! This is the time my servants move forward with no delay !!" yelled Galamouth giving out his ceremonial blessings to his faithful servants. Who were observing him standing below the golden stairs as he stood near his throne while small green hieroglyphs appeared at his feet. Shining very brightly as Galamouth smirked being intoxicated with his mad ambitions ,while White Master was feeling dignified because all Galamouth's creations thought of themselves as superior to the beings that roamed the world before them, thinking of themselves as new kings of the world they gratefully followed every command given to them by the Dark Lord. Not knowing Galamouth had no intention of sharing his authority with anyone. Small fountains of green energy were released from the stairs soaring to the ceiling lighting up brightly the area. Creating a spiral and joining together creating a DNA sequence ,some joining parts became dark on their eyes making Galamouth smile „The foundations had been corrupted...the world's establish boundaries cannot oppose our will, Universe is whole with body and mind ,breaking it up apart is our only option ,in order to establish a new structure or to abandon all forms partial shifts in clarity are not enough ... observe the decay of this world our poison is in effect, the sickness creates effects in bodies of all living things this sickness ,Greed and Envy, Lust and mistrust will bring up the seeds to fulfill the collapse ...the Downfall is unavoidable and deserved.... for such world really deserves to disappear...there should be no mourning and no cries for the world that gives birth only to pain and suffering ,which uses lies to deceive the weak ...This world that dared to take away my hearth !! will burn in ashes in front of my divine power !!! That is the will of the Dark God Galamouth !!" explained his happiness Galamouth looking closely at his servants, who did not dare to interrupt his holy proclamation of hate and anguish the reasons for this trial wouldn't be discovered so easily however. Galamouth had a very dark secret in his cold hearth and it was this secret that created that unbearable pain. Agony led him to lose his mental stability and the knowledge he discovered created a sentiment that led him to go fully insane. While his actions appeared logical to him ,in reality they were delusions created

by his delusional state...would anyone guess that it was him who needed to be saved from himself just as anyone else ? The question is how to save someone that subsumed in true madness ? What if madness is just another state of reality for chaos coexists with order, that's how it was and that's how it will be. Even Galamouth with all his hate couldn't change this, the only one thing he was able to create was merely a spectacular event and a great trial for my self, all of us who survived could only become stronger after that...poor Galamouth for its one of these truths he had no idea of. The darkness filled the place as the Young boy known as Dietrich opened huge golden doors that were the entrance to Galamouth's sanctuary. Who decided to test his puppet in a small show game.

"tsk. Typical." sneered a haunting voice from behind the smoke. no shadow or silhouette. but Galamouth knew of him, and the voice of Galamouth. One of the men in suits, fired a shot, without orders from Galamouth. The man taking pride in his unspoken loyalty as he took aim towards the source and apparent direction of the voice.

Clank!!!!

phisew!!!

The man's massive body fell forward. His face strewn with blood. the bullet had backfired, ripping through his neck.

" And I thought the doorman was intimidating." the voice chuckled.

By now the smoke had cleared and out from the shadows, a beaming face with golden hair laced on top of it peered out as if nodding to a neighbour on a normal Sunday morning. he let himself out of the concealing shadows and looked, if not casual then definitely innocent! His shadows massive as if of an athlete. His chin with a stubble growing. but those eyes were definitely harbouring huge traces of the very divine phenomena: innocence. such was the, the choice of Galamouth. And he took pride in what he thought he had spared a second longer thinking of, his choice, not the person.

The young man was someone when you looked at you could feel you could trust. he wasn't a hypocrite, oh no. In fact he had successfully weighed his ratio more towards good deeds so that he may still more points in what the world defined as a 'good person'. He seemed the kind that would close into himself in an embryo when depressed and make the other person blame him or herself for her apparent wrongdoings. In their eyes this person could do no wrong.

" What up, Yoda." he lingered his gaze towards the monk like midget. "New York working out for you?" He was greeted by a grunt from the small creature. The young man took this as something of concern and said as he moved lithely towards the tall glass that acted as the walls of the room, " hmm I see.

Hollywood kicked you out." already bored by his own wit, he moved on. He bent down his face hovering over the dead man's body. fresh blood still gushed out. The blonde's mouth as if drawn dazzily toward the action, slack open and his fingertips swam in the pool of blood. and just when the stained hand drew apart.....

"Dietrich!" boomed Galamouth from beyond the golden staircase.

Dietrich's hand stopped in mid distance, his eyes wide and bloodshot. As Galamouth's voice silenced the atmosphere, even the breaths of mortals in the room, it was broken by drops of blood, dripping to the floor, that were suspended in Dietrich's fingers. Dietrich didn't avert. he was busy. Busy looking longingly at

something beyond his hand, something creeping like weeds in his head and claiming his thoughts for their own vineyard.

"Are you aware that you are the only being I have to bother instructing properly?"

"It sounds like a genuine compliment ," He hadn't moved an inch

"you arent that deserving"

"so now the devil's into all that too"

"you know better than to argue with me"

"yes I do.."

"...and yet you dare defy.."

"your excellency.I was created to live and warped to serve, since I cant warp back I have no other option."

Dietrich moved. and in ine swift move was bowing. his hand on his chest

"..master." A scary glint in his eyes.

Galamouth looking at him enjoying his superiority over the boy,smiling and looking towards his loyal subordinates. „very well” Galamouth started talking yet again preparing himself to make one of his speachess. „I might forgive you're sins boy, as long as you continue to loyally follow my orders ,speak now and make it known to us...how did the mission in both New York and Hollywood go,was there lust and greed comparable to what I had detailed to you earlier ? Did they create the laws ,which visions I entrusted you with ?

SOPA,PIPA,ACTA,TPP and much more simple text that will become an instrument of opression used by my divine will, the stupidity and arrogance of the rich was always a usefull way to put entire universes into flames of war” Galamouth expressed as an incredible grin placed itself in his face ,making his madness clearly visible „Wonderfull, this is incredible how much disaster can be caused by few fools that consider themselves to be Gods ,this is universal, it was like that in ancient, and is like that in our time the future shall be shaped by these disasters as well, ignorance of the rich and mighty never change's...and although they have been wamed of that by the symbol of the Anti-Christ,they're greatest enemy all should fear !! When Man rullers will come to consider themselves to be more powerfull than God, this is when they're rule ends and there world bums in flames caused by there arrogance,for none can forgive this sin.Even God cannot use his powers to save humanity from such idiocy ,and because there is no more any reasons ,nor any higher authority than man to turn to in all scenarios a great war errupts and the world dies. My loyal subordinates , why do you think in all civilisation, culture and religion was so important? Why even dictators and Dark Lords use God to justify there motives ?

Have you ever wondered what will happen,once the followers of a religion ,understand the truth ? what will happen to Nations, planets entire galaxies !!! What will happen once the bounds that are to bind one to another are proven to be superficial and shallow, once the poor understand this horrible thruth that the mighty rich see them as merelly tools,animals or slaves and that the laws and every customs ever made !!!!! exist only to decieve these that work into supporting these that are born into luxiourious lively hoods and there carriers, The question I want to ask is a ridiclous for someone that become the Devil,but what do the rich offer to the poor for all there effort ?...yes exactly stick without a carrot only instignates rebellion and is this force of rebellion,from both sides the rich protecting there established order, and the poor that have become worthless trash in it, it is this rebelion that will fuel my master plan....speak Dietrich about the events in Hollywood and New York” Galamouth expressed and

looked at the boy who along with others listened to him very closely, everybody understood this truth very well in fact, Galamouth's view wasn't wrong. Dietrich walked forward standing turned his gaze upon his master and as a equal talked to him conveying his message as Galamouth listened to him very closely. "Forgive my sins?" dietrich smirked, a hint of sarcasm in his words. "uhh, no thanks" he chuckled bravely. He had this internal desire to provoke Galamouth, always. No matter how hard he tried he couldn't let go of that feeling. That superior sense of noticing things and not sucking up to 'Gods' even if his life was on the line. It was one of those feelings that made him grin, spin on his heels, give a thumbs up and scream in their faces " Hell yeah!"

Dietrich playfully clapped a hand over his mouth. " hollywood's been amazing." he gave a dewy smile "...and I am planning on moving to New York myself "

Gah! His master was a fool. He kept on going for the big fish and Dietrich personally thought was very unstrategic. Galamouth looked at him losing his patience desiring him to tell him what he needed to know „Speak Dietrich we are awaiting your words !!!” Yelled Galamouth demanding the boy to tell him what he did while on earth. Dietrich felt the pressure of a thousand weights over his shoulders. His legs gave way. He fell head first into the ground. He tried to get up, vibrating from the force his teeth clenching. He could only raise his head a few inches. „Speak now boy or I'll squish your body !!!” Galamouth spoke as his eyes became devilishly red, making him grin his teeth and scream in full madness laughing and sitting on his golden throne while petting his shadow birds that squeaked terribly. White Master turned his attention toward Dietrich and walked over the boy „Dietrich !!our master is weak from continued distortion of plane, please tell him what he wishes to hear !! before we lose our patience !!” White Master shouted angrily standing in defence of his beloved Dark Lord. Dietrich knew that unlike the Dark Lord White Master was strong willed and wielded a terrible force, if it wasn't for Galamouth's own orders. White Master would get rid of this inferior creature a long time ago, but Galamouth himself requested that all his servants be treated equally, and since he really respected him he wouldn't touch the boy in the presence of the Dark God. A girl with long black hair startled to see them, walked into the corridor slowly walking over to the cauldron where Enblemo was cooking his magic. Gazing at what Enblemo's cooking, she peeped into the cauldron to see, the yellow fluid change color into orange being amazed at how the monk like baby like grotesque creature, with a single wave of its hand made it change. Staring more closely, suddenly a mouse squeaked silently. The girl screamed when she felt something crawl on her feet. Enblemo looked at her annoyed a bit and held her arm „don't get excited over a simple rodent, did you bring the things I asked Reese?” Enblemo looked at her, letting go. Grimacing, "m-my apology." she lifts up a small bag with somewhat grains inside of it, Enblemo took the bag analysing it methodically checking the size of the grains after untying the bag. „Is this the best quality you could get?...un-believable how am I suppose to work my advanced magic with such low grade of Restoria ?” he looked angrily and annoyed at Reese grabbing her again and looking into her eyes, while scolding “look at me when I'm talking to you, you inferior being and listen closely our master deserves only the best grade for his plan, if you pull this again I personally will pummelize you ..did you get that ? Now go back and don't interfere with the maestro at work !” he ended angrily pushing the girl aside „be quiet and don't say a word, I'll deal with you later !!!” He added returning to his performance above the cauldron, creating more colorful smoke. Reese looked around to see the mouse. she was a bit worried. That she might have hurt that

mouse. she might have stepped at that mouse horribly. The mouse walked on the floor safely thought, it was a white mouse with blue eyes. Reese stayed a little bit far from the cauldron. far from that Enblemo, she sat outside then saw the mouse. "hey!" she shouted. The mouse sniffs around then it looked at the girl. Dark Master who was standing near was drawn to this un-usual comotion, the old man walked over interested in what the girl was doing, although he was part of the elite in Galamouth's fraction the old man that weared dark clothings, looking like a dark necromantic priest with white beard coming down to the floor, had a very soft hearth „is this you're pet ?" he asked quietly Reese, hoping his twin brother White Master won't hear him, fearing beeing scolded he walked over to them, petting Reese very gently on the head. The girl shook her head as a sign of NO for the old man's question. Then glances at the mouse, takes it to her hand then she rubs the mouse's fur gently.

„oh don't fear me child, I'm not like the others come closer little one" Dark Master suggested nearing the girl, he looked at the girl very closely, gently petting her head. Dark Master felt unbelievable pain watching at the girl, he knew why she was here and what she was to his master. Dark Master like Dietrich didn't like his masters plan, but like White Master he wouldn't dare question Galamouth. He was created together with his twin brother from Galamouth's blood, he was his Bloodchild and as such he had to obey his creator, gretefull for giving him his life. Dark Master sighted heavilly looking sadly at the child „This is just terrible, that you the young ones are given such task, my poor little child oh how I wish it wouldn't have to come to this, but fate cannot be changed taken out of this misery atleast you were given a new home, no merelly shelter while beeing experimented on. Our master's ambition must be fulfilled, this is the only reason we exist, I cannot defy my masters orders..no I cannot" Dark Master concluded talking to the girl trying to explain his situation, smiling very sadly as he walked closer to her „but you don't need to fear me" Dark Master added. Reese smiled at the old man. "i'm not scared" the girl looks at him innocently, listening to him with respect. she pats the mouse's head gently. Meanwhile a bit annoyed by his masters behaviour Enblemo was still performing his crafts at the cauldron making his fluids boil, tum into red creating a powerfull energy beam, which exploding covering the cauldron in orange flames making Enblemo step back, as the pink beam surfaced to the ceiling fulling the walls, beeing distributed on the entire structure creating a harmless pink schockwave that covered the entire hall. A powerfull explosion engulfed the entire scene not harming anyone inside. Despite the fact the pink flames bursted from all sides encircling them creating a whirlpool of un-imaginable energy, that bursted out of every comer. Which itself were controled by both Masters who quickly assumed their posts, and with their hands gived new life to this force. On the dark floor symbols appeared connecting everyone present to, the very structure itself, establishing another powerfull interfece. The Ancient program was performing its initiation as the howling sound indicated a massive ammount of water beeing pumped into the walls fuiling the structure's magic. Lord of Darkness Galamouth arisen from his throne and slowly went down in the middle of the circle created by the gathered, indicating all that happened was still beeing a part of his evil desire.

„let us commence with the ceremony, dance the flames of eternity, awaken stars that watch above the midnight sky, let us use you're power to deliver salvation, blood of death and blood of alive united in the name of the presence that watchess this spectacle, Let darkness arise from its slumber, go forth destruction ! The Eternal Grin reaper we call on you to give us you're power. The

cosmic interface of reality and Illusion, the gathered emotions of all living beings. The powers of universe,nature and cosmic fluxess. The great Eye in the skie's that watchess over all of its creation, grant us our desire and free us from you're slavery. Grant us tools to achieve full independence ,to bring end to this strife we call our life ,dissipate all illusion from this world, bring this madness to an end !!” Proclaimed Galamouth speaking his mad prayer as yellow flames engulfed him ,making him bright as if he was a sacrificial candle placed on a grave of the universe. A howling sound indicated an un-usual event as everything created so far ,exploded into dust. The Hall way was yet again covered in massive explotions coming from all possible places,making the grey smoke cover everything in its path, as all the gathered stood in the center of this event beeing bound together by red strings that glown creating a net of connection,revealing their feelings towards each other,the feelings which Galamouth planned to use to fuel his mad plan.Reese was puzzled. The sound of explosion frightened her. She was docking while her eyes were closed and her hands were covering her ears. Dark Master hugged her gently covering as massive air masses thrust between them and Galamouth's mad laught was heard everywhere „its all right dear..its all necessary for our master's grand plan” Dark Master explained this to the girl,trying to justify the madness that clouded Galamouth's mind. Not realising the destructive path it would take them.

"what the hell's happening? Now that i'm thinking about it. i don't know anything. Who exactly am i? i can't remember anything that happened from the past".Reese spoke in her thoughts. The ground shoke a bit as massive explotions were heard and seen,the orange flames again engulfed everything Galamouth looked at the scene with clear madness inside him laughing and enjoying the destructive spectacle,which took place in front of his eyes,moving his hand in front of himself pushing the winds away with his aura energy screaming as he did it.The winds which were the effects of this terrible dark magic howled terribly,surrounding all gathered as the dark lord created something using that un-bearable power Condensing the multi colorfull energies into a twisted rainbow spirals that again created known to us dna chains, just like in our bodies the universe had a DNA of its own,this colorfull spirals were the subject of these tests and powers. „base of the universe its own unique data base,look at it my faithfull survents ! This is our universe's DNA the core of all information,everything about everything encrypted here,for our eyes to see !! This is the true form of book of all life,this is where all destiny and fate is beeing written !! Look at what my power could create !! With these chains all is to be decided by us, my progress and research carried out by milenia's have brought us here !! Into the core of knowledge about the universe,but this is merelly a small fragment of what we aim to achieve,just the first page of this book ,which the content we want to change, in order to plant my ambitions into the program of all existence” Galamouth proclaimed making his presentation,as the winds subsided and everything calmed down revealing these colorfull spirals,that fullled the space ,beeing drawn in the empty space as if it were somekinda holograms,the present coul see these DNA chains as they came from out of nothingness by passing everyone præsnt,but they couldn't touch them or interfere with anything written in them. This was Universe's safety measure Galamouth knew of it,this safety measure prevented accidental rewrites that could be done by anyone present allowing them to move freely without damaging the chains ,that occupied the same space ,because these chains were merelly a projection and something more was needed to influence the content

written there. These three dimensional DNA chains along with other , DNA chains summounded earlier that Galamouth created were trying to unite but Galamouth's DNA sequences were thrown out not accepted making the Dark Lord growl in anger, as he looked at the process furiously. Reese couldn't believe in what she saw. She was stunned that she didn't even dare to move. She was totally terrified. Half of her face was being covered by her hands. This terrible spectacle before her eyes were blown out of proportion. Making her think "Is he a bad guy? Someone should've stop him." All she could do was gasp. She didn't knew what to do at that moment. Meanwhile Lord Galamouth walked closer smiling madly and his eyes shined in creepy red, as he revealed he wasn't a human but in fact a very terrible monster, he walked toward the girl ,but not because he wanted to talk to her, he was merelly amazed with his powers and yet felt annoyed growled „one more thing, one more thing still remains to block my path..But soon I shall over come these limitations and than my ambitions will become possible !!” He screamed looking at the girl his gaze meet her eyes. frightened to see Galamouth's eyes, Reese steps backward. She want to escape from those wicked eyes. She's so scared that she stucked up on where she is. "how one best send his wishes to God's ?" He asked Reese looking at her. Reese remained with a frightened look. „Its done so by the holly prayers of a priestess, Where is my beautifull Arua !! ..White Master!!” Screamed Galamouth making ,White Master come to them and kneel down „Yes my Lord ?” He asked gazing on his master „Go and bring her to me” Demanded Galamouth looking down at his survent „it will be done as you desire” White Master replied standing up and dissapearing. Galamouth smiled and looked at Reese „now all remains is to wait” He jously explained. Reese heard their conversation. She don't have any idea what they were planning. Galamouth looked at the girl and than at Enblemo who calmly mixed the ingriedients in his cauldron adding orange powder, beeing amazed at how far he got with his irsane visions ,Enblemo quickly patted the girl's back „don't stand there make yourself usefull !! Entertain the lord !” ordered Enblemo looking at the girl annoyed. "B-But how?" Reese asked innocently. "I dunno try talking" answered annoyed Enblemo as he was stiring his magical potion, that slowly started to change colors ,darkning. Reese gulped. She's a bit nervous. she didn't know how to entertain Galamouth. She was just standing and looking at him. Dark Master walked over to her and smiled gently ,coming closer to the Dark Lord „everything going according to you're plan my master” Dark Master spoke to Galamouth „Indeed my faitfhuull survent, everything is as I have described, my research took us this far, look and witness the glory of the knowledge that I have gathered” Galamouth replied extatic beeing amazed at how far he went. Reese can't relate to what they were talking about. she's confused and yet she's afraid to ask. She thinks that it is nothing to do with her anyway. Lord of Darkness was exctatic with the things he created laughing madly. Suddenly the mouse squeeks. Reese gtets the mouse then rubs it's fur. "Thank goodness u're ok. little fellow". „what is that rodent doing here ?” Asked Lord Galamouth looking at the small creature than looking around and wondering beeing lost in his mad thoughts „where is his owner, where is that girl Dawn ?” Asked Galamouth looking at Dark Master „we have no idea my lord...the girl appears to be lost, but we will soon locate her” Dark Master answered bowing to the Dark Lord „ah never mind she's of no importance...just a weak child a failure in experiment...keep that mouse away from me little girl, I hate rodents” growled Galamouth and walked away towards his golden throne. "Pfft! i didn't know that he hates mouse", Reese whispered to herself. „I wouldn't worry about it...our master hates everything because of his wounded hearth” Dark Master

whispered to the girl as she was talking to herself. She looked at the Dark Master. "Wounded? did he had a painful past?"... "Yes our Master had a painfull past full of betrayals ,would you like to hear this story ?" Asked Dark Master looking at the girl ,making her more interested. Reese nodded as the mouse nibbles her finger, She giggled then glances at Dark Master. „very well listen than little girl..Ill tell you the story of our powerfull master, a man that is clouded in secrets ,the pridefull warrior of Darkness,the Eternal watcher of all universes,this is a story of hearth that became the star of darkness" Dark Master begun his tale ,getting even the Dark Lord himself interested as he loved stories about himself. Reese who's quite interested with Galamouth's story, she lended her ears and listened to the Dark master. Reese just looked at the Dark Master. waiting for what will the Dark Master tell next...„In ancient world,he was a general surving for the motherland that adopted him from the betrayal of his own kind,a skillfull warrior of inhumane abilities,he was well honored among the ranks of the nobility that lost theire country, His new mother land betrayed by the greed of powerfull neighbors who like three ravens divided the land into three,forcing the people of the adopted land to fight to regain theire freedom,blood and tears from many battle's and unsuccesfull attempts at revivin the dead state,politics is a cruell game full of betrayal and the new rullers of the land decided to kill the souls of the nation they occupied,but these people unlike any others were skillfull warioris,and wonderfull patriots,theire romantism and naivette coupled with skillfull use of arms became the nightmare of these that deared to conquer the mother land. In fact these people had passion and a love to drink ,a happy a bit loud nation,full of people you wouldn't find anywhere else in the entire universe,it must be seen to believe how simple and yet advanced this nation and its proud people were,naturally our Lord felt at peace there surrounded by love and compation of his newly found bretheren,in this brother hood he waged battle's ,suprising the occupiers fighting in forests,these people were not affraid of wilderness as they were said to be wild themselves by the so called civilised nations,these were the dark age's of incredible opression.In these times incredible hero's were born,but not to attain victory,these hero's were often sacrificed to preserve the memory of the people,that was the brutal scope of the opression,inhumane sacrifice of entire generations that were expelled for the love given theire motherland and theire holly queen that looked from the nation from a single painting ,that was fated to become the property of these people by God himself.Made by the man that surved the prophet himself,it was painted on the table,the holly prophet eated his last breed,and over time given to the people of this nation,for the prophet intendeed to give them a gift althought he himself couldn't visit this strange land,and was long dead before it was painted,one of seventy special paintings but only this one destined to this land as a reward for the faith these people had.This Dark Lady shown in the painting was in no way connected to darkness,she was the mother of light that guided many lands of this ancient world,and the image itself a present from the people that found theire resting place and a safe place to dwell in the motherland that adopted our Lord" Dark Master slowly told the story looking at Reese who smiled to him and looking slowly interested in his Lord's reaction,the Dark Lord was lost in his memories „yes the Black Madonna was a holly symbol to my people,we believed in the power of the holly one,today I find it laughable oh how blinded and ignorant that world was"replied Galamouth smiling and looking towards the cealing. „our Lord was known under a different name back than, he was Duke Dal-Wing, this name beeing the only thing he had before beeing adopted into nobility,raised by flames of wars even after beeing taken as a child into an



aristocratic family, the young boy couldn't quite fit in, and while love and devotion were present in that family, the society didn't allow the youngster to forget whom he was, and that he wasn't one of the high classes, thus the young Dal-Wing as he was known back then liked to spend most of his time in isolation contemplating the hidden mysteries of this world, learning the hidden laws and becoming one with nature, the culture and wonderful poetry only stirred up this passion, the boy and later the young man gathered knowledge and learned about things becoming an engineer, which was a profession of great benefits, and merits, this profession allowed the boy to become more active in the social sphere and later became a wonderful opportunity to build his own personal view point, for a time it seemed the man wouldn't have to be alone, that he found his second half, in a girl that was unlike anyone he ever met, robust beauty and charm coupled with an incredible skill in art of war, she was a true female warrior and an incredible soldier whose skills no one could challenge, her knowledge came from extensive travels and her social charm was a rarity among such young maidens that lived in that era, the chatty maiden and her robust attitude succeeded in catching the attention of our Lord, captivating him and enslaving the girl's wits allowed her to gain the hearth of our master, yet fate can be cruel it was a time of strife and the maiden had duties more important than trivial love in fact she was one of these heroes that were needed to be sacrificed, her death impacted our Lord so profoundly that it changed the core of his very being and it was this moment from which the one known as Galamouth was born" Dark Master ended his speech while Galamouth smiled and clapped his hands in amazement, standing up and walking down "But in this day, which we awaited for so long this pain will end, with completion of my desires there finally will be no boundaries, and we shall become the foundations of an entire new reality" Galamouth proclaimed sitting down on his throne and drew symbols in the air, as if playing like a little child. These symbols started glowing in red, making the mad Lord laugh happily "wonderful this new power is, it all so grand and superior... I'm merely like a child that plays in the dark" Galamouth proclaimed laughing madly, while Reese looked at Galamouth. She felt sad because of things she heard from the dark Master, as he looked into the far distant, while others were trying to understand the situation. The white DNA chains flown in the air, as holographic images, appearing from time to time, white chains turning around this was the manifestation of the language, that like in a computer game created the reality all were witnessing, some strains were clouded in dark or grey smoke, these were dimensions or worlds that suffered from darkness, others shined in white indicating that in these worlds, light's power was freely received. The truth was very different. Unlike how the system tried to portray the world, it was its dominance that was limited to small ghetto-like structure and true paradises surrounded them. That's why these that were enslaved needed only to leave the cage, to not be afraid and make the first step. The mad Lord Galamouth didn't understand that, despite having the truth under his noose, he couldn't see this simple reality. Being squished by the burdening pressure he himself created, that sucked him from inside, Galamouth felt that there was a dark hole in place of his soul, and that his emotions and passions were slowly drained from his very being, this was a terrible sickness that made that happen to the one that became the Dark Lord Galamouth. Creating a hollow existence he already had nothing, so he felt attached to his burden and all of his sorrow, instead of letting it go to the place it belonged, Galamouth held to it afraid of losing it. He made himself believe that if it went away, he would be left with nothing, not realising that it was that, which stopped him from gaining something new. This was a mental

state he was trapped in since the early nineteen century on an ancient planet known as earth. Galamouth couldn't understand why his lover needed to die, in this war in that country that later become so arrogant. Billions of eons passed and he developed his own truths, and dark facts becoming obsessed in what he deemed, the only rightfull course of all events. The only true course for someone as great as him to follow, he wanted to make destruction into a greatest spectacle ever seen, this was his true ambition to which he turned all of his devotion, even though his hearth hurt a bit, and he couldn't realize this pain in his chest. This only created more nerve in his mind as chaotic thoughts gathered inside him, scaring everyone. Terrifying even him, for he wasn't able to believe how evil he became, and yet he both loved and hated his new mind set, and the life he chosen, in eternal seclusion, the bringer of doom to all existence, a dream that couldn't ever be realized, because in this world death was yet another illusion, a painful lesson and a wake up call to those that lived in eternal slumber, to awaken to true life, to the world that exist in reality and not a vague nightmare created by the system. Money and the system are a part of illusion that creates nightmares, all along it was its purpose its up to everyone to realize this and choose a mean of salvation, Galamouth didn't understand that as well. For what he thought of himself he didn't understand „ a great deal of many things” as a certain character from a science fiction war opera series, which I love to watch even now, would say. He too was a corrupt leader that sold himself to darkness, just like Galamouth now. But perhaps the fictional was more sinister than the real one, that's what the main difference between fantasy and real life is, how epic a fight might get in real life it always has, how we could put it a down to earth cause. Sometimes its greed for power thought, like in the movies but the reasons for it also might be complex, some choose darkness thinking they could save everyone by becoming a necessary evil element in place, having all control, I wonder was the Evil emperorr from that movie series trying to save something, or was he doing it just for money, and what other motivations pushed him, maybe I'll question him someday, just as I will Galamouth, but for now I wasn't there. So I can only tell, what I was told before. The Darkness that corrupted Galamouth's soul already hold tightly to his frozen hearth. This hearth was walled by ice created by his cold emotions, this barrier was un-breakable but even though, this too would be crushed by fate. For there would be made means to do that this was necessary to continue with the change in Galamouth's soul, that must finally take its place, even the Dark Lord couldn't escape this, his plan and ambition were therefore allowed to continue by the universe, being merely a pretext to change and reshape his very being, after all these billions of eons years, his soul would be killed only to reborn again. Galamouth himself was unaware of this, despite the fact it already begun. This was slowly taking its course, becoming visible, yet still not noticable to those around him, making Galamouth tremble not knowing making him believe it was merely extasy. The feeling slowly passed away, retuning in circular fashion always hunting at the most in appropriate moment, Galamouth already learned to tolerate this new feeling, not showing it to the outside. For now the most important thing for him was to go along with his desires, there was no force that could turn him away from this path, and indeed no one was to turn him away from it, Galamouth's path was necessary, this event should take its place. It was necessary. The change was necessary, we all know that but we rarely expect it to happen, despite the fact we ourselves desire it. We simply don't expect that kinda change, life can be twisted and although we will always receive what we require, at given moment of time it may not be fully what we desire. That's why often we will not understand

the change in progress, being afraid when we realize it is happening. The floors glowed in both red and blue, pulsing giving out a metallic sound, making the Dark Lord observe this strange scenery more, creating music that couldn't be described, as hot steam sounds mixed with unknown metallic ones. A huge un-seen machinery was heard working, giving an un-explainable feel. The atmosphere was that of waiting, as something or someone were awaited at this moment, that neared closer. Time was a fleeting illusion, this place was beyond even time itself, change's that appeared here affected all worlds even the one you live in, and although you do not see anything, something is happening near you. Open your eyes! It is happening now! Do you feel the pain squishing your chest, these are the signs of our time, the proof it's happening!! You are bound to us as we are bound to you, you can feel that? Our dear reader? You understand the importance of these events? Can you even comprehend! the heavy weight, Galamouth's mind was under, this pressure that was un-describable. His mind like a solid stone as that heavy and as that hard to shape, only a truly powerful force could reshape this being. Imagine the strength needed to do that! Is there a force or a single being capable of doing something of that grand magnitude? White Master appeared, the old man was accompanied by beautiful yellow haired girls, dressed in beautiful futuristic cloths and wearing blue robes, fit for a goddess. The little girls that looked like a 14 year olds, one of them knelt down giving her respects to the Dark Lord, before walking cheerfully to meet with him, in her own unique way, the other was running all over the place, quickly noticing Reese and greeting with cheerfully. The timid and more calmer one was dressed in pink futuristic cloths, while the loud girl wore orange ones, both were of a special kind, and had an important role to play in the Dark Lord's ambition. In order to pursue this story to this point, where yet another known already character was to make an entrance. We need to go back into a distant past, eons of billions years. This past from the timeline of a girl, Arua's own memories. Green forest and a blue dark skies full of white stars, a long time of waiting the spirit came back without Aya, Arua's younger sister. Aya gone after she came to Ravandred forest, which used to be near the Baravan Castle. Arua comes out, while it was raining taking out the umbrella, running quickly and entering the dark forest, shocked and not being able to think she rushed quickly to save her sister, this could only end in falling onto a tree. Rain was slowly falling down hitting the ground, as the girl took her head up after falling down to look at the two figures that stood before her, on the nearby hill. The world in which she lived was in the middle of a terrible civil war, therefore she was afraid of the two figures that suddenly appeared in the forest. Both Arua and Aya were noted spirit users, therefore there would be many that would hunt them down. The girl looked into their faces seeing no reactions as the two were talking to each other, ignoring her presence. Arua was afraid her sister didn't return from her last assignment, she rightly feared the world. This made her almost cry. One of the figures who was in fact the Lord of Darkness Galamouth himself took notice of this behaviour smirking he asked the question „are you all right little girl“ he spoke the words to the girl. Surprising Dietrich a bit, as he was the second figure, Galamouth while walking closer looked at this new interesting subject, this girl was dressed in ancient blue robes, a spiritual maiden, a very rare yet important find for the dark lord who was looking for able helpers, she was running out the forest, holding a tiny blue light ball. Being confused and a bit delusional, Galamouth looked at her closely knowing the pain and suffering she was just coming through, paradoxically he understood it because, he himself went through it. The Girl was afraid walked a bit back, being surrounded by

dark scary tree shape's ,in this fantasy world.,,sis,just wait Ill kill the one that killed you” ,she cried out tears falling down her cheeks and tried to run,even thought she was already tired. She run quite a distance. Hoping to find her sister out there ,but she already knew her little sis's soul was in her hand now. She kept running,didn't notice wherever she was. She realized that she was lost in the forest. She fell down,tired. She tried walking. Realizing after looking forward that she was beeing watched here were two guys. Looking at her crying. She didn't know why she was crying. One of the guys come and give his hand to the girl,”will u follow me,for all the eternity?” He asked looking at her with his redish creepy eyes,and yet sounding very trustworthy.Kneeling down and looking into her almost aquatic blue eyes,seeing that the girl finally noticed his presence. Arua was a bit affraid wanted to escape,but her body was exhausted,she wouldn't escape even if she wanted, this meeting was destined and she would be drawn towards his side.Arua didn't understant why she wanted to follow galamouth,,but she believed that the only reason she lived was to surve he dark lord and protect her sister,from this moment caused by an unknown impulse Aura would always follow Galamouth,wherever he went. Partially she followed him because of a spell he used on her,but in time over eons of years and after he truely ressurected her sister, Arua's feelings turned to devotion and love. Arua followed Galamouth cause she loved in many ways,this wasn't something the Dark Lord himself understood. Back to the present, Lord of Darkness looked at the girl that entered the stage,smiling „You finally came my beautifull priestess” He started talking with Aura as she only noded,meanwhile Reese couldn't ,get free from the hug Aya gave her beeing happy to see,someone she loved to play with,despite the fact that Reese,Arua and Aya were of different status,theire relationship was on a fair level,even Dietrich had a more softer and friendlier side,Enblemo and both Masters as well as theire lunatic Lord ,really did care for them and other stray childrens like them . They found,despite using them for somekinda research,they also gived them a sort of home, a bizzare place to call home thought but one they and others like them could inhabit without boundries,thats why Galamouth was already used to having someone peek into theire secret base.In fact in his case he loved that because that allowed the evil Lord to brag about his evil plans,and of course this made him some sort of interest to the little childrens who didn't fear the mad angel and instead loved to hear scary or strange stories from him,despite it not beeing his intention he unknowingly gived them some love and compation,or adleast a reason to live,as they could always see the most evil beeing of the universe,or try to confront him.Which in the case of these little childrens who didn't have a home, a family could constitute for that,for they knew someone as loonely as themselves which drawn them near him.Of course the children were safe,or would you really care if they died ? These were childrens that were abandoned by the world,sometimes used as slaves look around yourself, see how many abandoned children are living in you're area, I know what you're thinking , Galamouth is a lunatic that enslaved these childrens and is using them for his hideous experiments, well that's true some of them died because of that,are you schocked, you live in a world which allows that,you're so called care foundations do nothing ! Galamouth atleast was willing to take care of them, he wasn't doing it for free or out of compation but for these that managed to somehow survive a day longer,these that were able to be cured,yes for these childrens this kinda life was a paradise.Galamouth wasn't a role model,but it were the role models that abandoned these childrens,today people often think about battling with evil,but in the process we forget about the victims only concentrating on the main

enemy, sometimes enemy needs only to be restrained a bit thought. In battle's we need to understand everything even something trivial as relationships, because it can happen that for the sake of protecting them, the one that we thought is evil might abandon his evil ways and willingly restrain his evil ways, in time producing or concentrating solely on good things, such example on earth was Wojciech Jaruzelski, a military leader that abandoned the evil doctrine and sacrificed himself, to help his country which he was a leader to undergo a necessary change. We need to remember and forgive, not forgetting but restrain punishment and allow such people to fix the damage they created. This is a higher purpose, than it mustn't be interrupted because someone can only change under a guidance of GOD. If that's so and we can confirm the change, than however evil that person was, we must restrain ourselves, because his evil can leave him and enter us, calling on us to become like he was before, in that time perhaps we can even spoil what that person tried to fix, and that's when we become evil and ignorant, it's hard to forgive others. It's hard to live with a shame but if we change, than it's ok to forgive one self and enter paradise, for it's ok to call the one I named here a good politician and leader, for he understood his errors and gave up his position, and that's praise worthy. Because for a politician to loose on purpose or leave post, means almost dying. It was the influence of another great man a pope John Paul II that made it possible, and that's why this miracle happened. Galamouth needed to meet someone like that as well of course it would look very differently from the world I was born into, because it was a very different world. More far advanced than the tiny world I was born into, and so things looked a bit differently, for you reading this, the events I describe are fiction. But for me! the one describing it, it was reality. How can it be so? To understand this let's return to the action the smoke was slowly flowing through the area, not hindering breathing as Enblemo was again slowly stirring the potion from his magical cauldron, Reese was embraced by Aya who laughed happily. She just smiled and embraced Aya back, both of them laughed while being observed by others that also minded their own business, Galamouth smirked his red eyes were seeing visions of his desires, imagining how much suffering his dark powers will cause, he was in somekinda extasy and yet didn't know whether this was what he really wanted, he was slowly knocked out in a sense from his thoughts by another pawn one that he made especially dear to his dark, covered in thorns hearth. Looking at the face that smiled even to him expecting to begin a dialog with the now present Arua. Galamouth mind clouded in abstracts thoughts, his ideas racing like crazy, his mindset ready. Now something great was to finally be achieved as he lustfully looked in the girl's eyes seeing only obedience in them. The pressure created by his madness now covered his mind, like a net of thorns that engulfed themselves into the very core of his being, Galamouth wanted to scream from this inhumane agony. „Be gone Evil thoughts! leave my troubled soul, grant me eternal salvation my beloved priestess !!” he proclaimed looking at the girl and petting her yellow hair slowly calming himself down by the faithfulness the girl shown towards him.



## Chapter 2

### „The convent of Gods”

The skies were silver full of shining stars and in a center a huge orange planet acted as a moon, silver color pulsed deflecting the light that flashed unto it from an unidentified source, the skies looked like water or at least a liquid of some sort, with the orange planet being engulfed in it, almost sinking while rotating or being rotated by the silver liquid that engulfed it while the stars were in reality an illusion created by the silver pulsing appearing and disappearing at different places some to travel making the stars appear to be alive. This view was distorted and the silver covered the planet taking it inside, just to make it go outside again. Orange lines went through the skies touching the orange planet engulfing it in redish flames while the lines disappeared after few seconds the fire that engulfed the planet subsided also slowly vanishing. Tiny cracks started to appear on the surface of the sky slowly covering it and growing, starting off as tiny dots that send lines or more exactly create circles in a way that was very similar to how a Spider created its web, these crackling lines slowly sprouted from these tiny circles dividing and creating more tiny lines that slowly covered the surface creating other circles, from which other lines sprouted dividing themselves into different branches and again creating new circles repeating the process to infinity. A loud broken glass sound was heard as the sky was broken and its shards fallen down while it itself was again covered in orange flames which took over the silver plane and created an orange sky with the orange planet completely dissolving in it. Rays of different colors fallen into the sky mixing with the orange creating a huge whirlpool of shiny colors, the whirlpool started by turning very slowly and accelerated until it reached a speed

where the colors couldn't been regognized shooting out red lightings. The whirlpools turned into purple tunels that sucked in everything ,making the white light thrusts inside it and go throught it to create a special dimension, this was Echelion at its best creating a special sealed world for Gods to meet and discuss the matters of live, economy, spirits and laws the entire Universe's were subject to. A Golden city appeared takin form in this designated space guarded by high walls and seven golden gates. The city's fundaments was the shape of star a classical symbol of both hope and magic, as the most powerfull beeings in the universe were meeting this design was very aproprate, the rays of light crafted golden side walks for the celestial beeings to walk upon. with beautiful gardens of unseen and un describable beauty were beeing created by a celestial rainbow of lights that beared both life and creation. The Gardens were arranged in ancient classical style and devotion to many elements of nature symbolising the unity of life. Green grass, flowers of different kind and color animals gathered from many dimensions and universes brought together ,ressurrected after dying in their original worlds in order to entertain the Gods. In the center of this ancient classicly designed town a huge temple on huge stairs ,carbed into a huge mountain was placed reminding the Ancient temple's of Athena. The town most obviously brought back from her memories. She herself was standing in the center directing the forces of creation by her will. A maiden of extra ordinary elegance ,eternal virgin. Brown hair and cheeky sharp blue eyes were her eternal atributes. Dressed in wonderfull but revealing white robe made from a silk that only a true goddess could afford. In her hands she holded a spear and a woden shield with Meduza's head on it, two of three items she would carry everywhere. The third beeing her great silver helmet. Walking forward on her golden sandals she directed the lights with her spear, while another Goddess was walking towards the stairs Athene was standing on. This one dressed in dark victorian era dress similiar to a wedding dress or funeral one but without the top ,her arms naked, neck clearly visible beautifull face with purple eyes and dark as night long hair, with tiny pentagrams earrings. Just like Athena she look like a young 28 year old maiden, but just as Athena she was bilions of Eons years old. White moon appeared and beautiful blue night with bright stars were painted on the orange skies making the scenery look natural as the golden buildings were taking shape and form. The beautifull Goddess of night looked towards Athena walking closer and bowing to show respect. „well done for a Goddess thats not associated with night and magic” The Dark haired Goddess spoken as the houling of dogs was beeing heard ,while Athena was slowly walking down from the stairs to great the newly appeared Goddess „Aren't I the Goddess of Wisdom dear Hecate ?” She asked smiling walking down with her ussuall tomboyish attitude while a powerfull white lighting hitteed the center of the golden square behind Hecate and dark dogs walked towards her mistress barking with respect on the shape that formed from the lighting and a harsh tone was heard „ you're done with prepairations” ... „Not yet my lord” Hecate replied kneeling down to the shape as Athena was walking closer and bowed in respect, the shape turned into a man of fourty years who weared a green laurel wreath on his white haired head. His sight was sharp decisive and althought he looked old there was no weakness in his presence no one would dear to attack him or face a duell with this person, while he walked decisively marching towards his daughter and loyal survent. This was the king of the Greek Gods fraction the master of all Zeus ,the bearer of lighting the first one to use it as his weapon and one of only two to make it his own trade mark. A white pigeon landed on the golden stairs of the temple Athena was standing before she walked over to Zeus and a fire shape



appeared first appearing as a classical shape human and then started to materialize into an old man with a very white beard wearing an old and dusty clothing, however his clothing quickly turned gold and the remaining Gods kneeled down in respect towards him. „I welcome these that came to our meeting, I hope many more will honor us with their presence” Said the old man as he walked towards the Gods. „they are slowly gathering Lord Yahweh, the convent of God's will go as scheduled, all were informed” Zeus answered walking toward Yahweh and kneeling down near his legs while Yahweh himself standing on the stairs putted his hand on Zeus's shoulder. „I know I can count on you when it comes to discipline my friend, stand up” Yahweh proclaimed walking down and nearing to Zeus while slowly God's of entire Universe and all dimensions were appearing in this designated area. „let us wait for them inside the temple lads” Proclaimed Yahweh and made his way slowly walking inside the temple followed by the remaining gods, while different spiritual shapes begun to materialize and walk on the stairs as well, some of them talked with each other. They all looked like man and woman gathered from different time periods ranging from distant past to yet un-seen future. All were Gods that ruled both the spirit worlds and entire galaxies. Past, Present and the future were gathered in a place where time itself didn't exist. Golden bricks shined from a distance creating a spectacle of incredible wealth that was to be seen from even the most far away location. Shadowy shapes appeared all over this golden ancient hellenistic like town, materializing into more humane appearances, young and beautiful all from different races walking slowly onto the steps of the main temple. The huge triangle roof of this amazing temple was being held in place by powerful columns and pillars placed all over the temple, which was built in doric style huge than everything that was ever built before, walled from the regular gold town with huge walls and in front of the temple building a huge square and a beautiful round fountain, placed in the middle of the square. From this fountain almost representively blue water was falling out into the fountain's huge round pool. Everything was made to look at its best, because yet another elites were having their meeting. Politicians, elites and Gods were so alike in these meetings they always love to gather in order to hold their disputes and show off their dresses, fashion elements they have acquired with their money. God's created to be the kings of souls should be different but because of the fact they were created from human minds, they were similar to the very same humans that oppress them in the names of their laws, supremacy or wealth. This was too merely a political meeting, held by powerful politicians that ruled time and space together, shaping and controlling the very world we all lived in. It was their powers that created the place this convent was to take place, make no mistake this place was created out of nothingness, entire matter was created from single thoughts that fertilize these dimensions, taking them to the next level allowing to live every single concept on its own unique way. Interesting concept to ponder to understand how exactly this reality works, which despite being so different was also very similar to the material plane we all know and live in. The Idea of Gods was created to first symbolize powerful powers of nature which couldn't be understood by the ancient civilisations, establishing the eons old tradition of personifying everything that cannot be understood by simple human minds. This was then used by Echelion which acting on God's will gave birth to the human shapes giving them power, personalities and souls as imagined by the people creating them to live and help humanity while being above the human race and forming the worlds that formed them. A perfect spiral of creation was thus established, the natural order that always should be obeyed

everything that is created ,creates its own creator which is created by what it creates. These that are suppose to be kings should serve these that serve them in that way the balance can be accomplished and the power of creation allow to flow without any hindrances enriching all planes. Politicians who hear or read this text written beyond their imagination should then understand and heed this warning very closely, they are but servants of people they govern over, and then they should understand creating laws that will lead to abuse is against this world's very wishes and who ever goes against these wishes will suffer the consequence , for the system isn't the world but merely a tool used by the politicians to rule over the world, the tool therefore cannot be over the world. The world and its population have right to go against the wishes of this tool, when these wishes may take away the freedom to create. Freedom of spirit shouldn't be constrained by money even though money too has been used to create. Money and system are always to be unequal in this as tools they shouldn't take possession and make obsession over it, the means shouldn't not be obsessed about, that's why Outcasts are necessary helping to put things in its rightful order individuals that walk between light and darkness ensuring both of these powers will be kept in eternal balance and this concept was a mean to ensure that as well. This balance is a tremendous power that keeps everything in its place being a border, which shouldn't be ever passed. The eternal truth of the symbol Yin and Yang, the darkness and light in a circle each containing in itself a small portion of the other. The Universe's symbol known as Taji used by ancient monks and philosophers to portray these powers that were fundamental to our existence. These are the powers that should always be obeyed and kept in its rightful places. For there is no death without life, and no life without death. After every night a day comes and after every day night comes. This is the balance that controls and shapes all known worlds. This world was ruled by its own bizarre rules that defied logic, everything that was weird elsewhere here could be considered normal. Gods on their own part are rulers of all these secret matters ,that remain hidden from ordinary mortals and demons or angels of lower ranks whom are controlled by well prepared belief systems which constitute their own reasons for existence ,such is the power of these that ruled all. Doctrines, theology and political systems, the mass produced knowledge. The so called social standards and norms that we all are forced to obey are merely a by product of this. In order for the world to remain in balance it should remain in perpetual conflict, between the sides of Goodness and Evil ,that's what become the purpose of the Eternal War, all forces were released to struggle and take possession of these that would follow them, this is the natural state of order everything else is just a lie created to cover this truth. To fight is natural, to possess is natural, as well, to possess too much becomes a burden just like possessing too little creates a burden as well. It were the representations of these ambitions taking human form, a form understandable to us ,that gathered inside the luxurious temple, some of them were once human or demonic that merely took the role scripted to them by God, others were personifications of God's created by human or alien cultures ,that become so popular that God decided to form them from these ideas and give them their life. They all now were gathered in this huge Golden temple Athena created from her memories, talking ,chatting, flirting, eating fruits on silver plates and drinking wine from huge golden cups, some were even having sex not being interrupted by others in this chaotic crowd, who didn't even find the behaviour offensive, sitting on the ground near a huge pool where both male and female God's were bathing not ashamed of their nudity. Again in the representatively

clean blue water that occupied this ancient greek huge bathing pool. Golden Statues depicting nude people ,young,old,children according to long forgotten ancient estetics. Some despite looking as young adults were playing like children,chasing nudelly behind a Golden ball. God's didn't find this behaviour weird or childish. They were eternal children after all.Laughter and chotic talks was heard everywhere and at first no body would notice ,that exactly in this way the world's most crutial matters were decided not only by these God's that talked seriously,but also by these that had sex with each other or played with that Golden ball,important matters were mixed in conversation full of jokes,immoral propositions or even betting ,casual chatting etc. Laughts and joy were hered everywhere,sometimes it was real joy,but you would be able to notice false joy as well. Elaborate intrigues that were planned and than carried out,just politics done by the most authoritarian beeings that ever existed,nothing that would,or should be told about. This was the bare truth of how these important and crutial matters that could decide about our life and death were decided,no one should know about it, and I know that no one will believe my description telling me that Im making it up,but Im not writing this to convince anyone remember that. I am just chronicalling some interesting things that happened to me thats all ,enjoy it as any other story you would read. Stories, all stories whether true or fictional ones are written to be read,it really dosen't matter whether they potray events ohnestly or add as someone would call it ,more color into the desrcriptions. In fact its true that many of these so called true storie's are nothing more, but mere bullshit made to confuse us more into obeying the rules of this game we call our life.Every important beeing has adleast once in its own life authorized an official authobiography, also there thousands of such biographies written by its enemies. Even God has his holly books and I my self write my own one's as well these books that potray these events, which you read might as well be considered as official authobiographies,I never seen bad books about my self thought...on the other hand I have been mentioned in some encyclopedia's or other studies as an example of a disturbing personality dis-orders. But returning to the events that taken place in that temple ,the God's were obviously enjoying themselves and their power. The brown haired woman with red seductive eyes dressed in a blue cloath that revealed her nude and seductive body, was watching other Gods drinking red whine, on her laps a dark haired man lied, they were just after sex, and their identity was known she was queen Lilith, while the man was Belzebub's survent and his right hand , the Dark Angel Zavebe. His golden armor which he weared while entering this temple, was lying scattered on the floor as the queen of lust herself tooked it off from this handsome and powerfull dark figure,Zavebe himself as all man quickly fallen into Liliths temptation,while she gently lured him towards her letting him have his way with her seductive body as his lower insticts were ingeniuallly awaken. „Im in the reachess of heaven” Zavebe exclaimed in extasy while the Dark Queen smirked laughing „far from it ..you fallen into the pits of hell” answering and kissing him slowly embracing the dark haired angel of death. „Be carefull with my property !” Belzebub who was sitting on one of the golden cushions adorned with beautifull womans swarming to his old looking naked body. The girls were the survents of Lilith brought to this temple to entertain the God's willing to use these godly courtesants. They so covered the Dark Lord he wasn't clearly visible. Despite what many would consider schocking ,this low insticts were an equalising force to the hight qualities of the world they were doing this in.In order for balance to be maintained all creatures are both capable to good and evil,to do and enjoy high

things as well as indulge in the lowly pleasures of the body. The God's were required to be possessed by the very same powers and instincts that controlled us, in order to understand mankind, the demons and angels as well as their masters the God's were made corrupt just as we are. You can't reach Heavens before you understand Hell, now that's a shocking conclusion isn't it. On the other side of the temple Yahweh was standing drawing a circle with a diamond, caine. Being surrounded by other God's that took part in his lectures. He slowly created glowing orange symbols, while his diamond caine, glowed in bright red lighting up the area as the golden walls and floor deflected the red light. The crowd was amazed watching the spectacle and all clapped hands, while closely watching the old philosopher perform his demonstration, he drew a huge circle and its centre a red triangle with an eye inside appeared. Yahweh dropped the caine, making it hit the floor creating a sound wave that made his symbols glow in orange flames, creating an orange whirlpool. Yahweh waved his hands slowly as if he was trying to throw something away. The whirlpool squeaked as the yellow flames gathered into a sphere, he walked towards it slowly petting the sphere not feeling the incredible heat that emanated from it, like a great sculptor forcing the unfriendly ball of fire to form into a fire bird. Creating a phoenix that flew out of the sphere breaking, or more exactly hatching out of it, making the crowd scream impressed. The fire bird flew across the temple making all present laugh and clap hands. Yahweh's speciality was fire magic, and he was the most prominent fire user among God's, it was this proficiency that gave him the title of the High priest among them. This power and incredible wisdom made him respected and feared by many. It was Yahweh who created philosophical fundamentals for the new society, that was created after humans and other mortal species learned how to become Immortal joining the afterlife with the material plain. Learning about it and the creatures that were born or created there, It was Yahweh who first made contact with the dead and could scientifically prove it, this happened after many changes were made to the world when science became so powerful that people were able to understand it. This was why he played such an important role, in both the Echelon which was the After Life and Megacivilisation which was the future of the material worlds, this also allowed people to understand why ancient's claimed the world came out from an egg, as the echelon could be considered a farm of these eggs. Yahweh continued his magic making the fire bird divide into two and then dividing the two into four, making each of them change colors from yellow to blue, from blue to green, pink and silver and dark, white as well among others. Next the birds flew into each other hitting themselves and creating a golden star, making it shine brightly and disappear slowly into the darkness. „Just like fame my creations shined with incredible light, amazing everyone with its brilliance, however this kind of influence doesn't last and disappears quickly only to be forever forgotten, true influence is built step by step, slowly in painstaking details, true artists build their works while being laughed by the industry, because true art isn't something that is locked by fame and prestige a true artist shouldn't care about it, people, angels or demons if they wish to create culture they shouldn't go after money or fame, because building a true culture and obtaining true wisdom isn't about being spotted with the right people but instead requires one to become very humble, to understand that he or she's merely a small part of the whole creative process that takes its place far beyond the human shell. We as merely receivers need to know that we were used only to channel the whole complex process, being a part of this life creating influence. We add our energy to the created complex, but we're not its creators. This is my dear, an important

truth that needs to be written into your religions and distributed among you're followers, because its their energy added to this creative whirlpool, which give birth to new spiritual beings, worlds and universes. Its the powers that created us and them. We the God's created religions as a means to sustain and enlarge this process after learning how to harness this energy we should use it to benefit all life, remember that were mere servants of the mortals not their masters, we serve, guide, were loving parents and friends we even become lovers. We give them all we have and they give us all what they have, this is the power of bond that unites us to mortal man, and there is no sin in this. Don't be shy about using you're material shells to further these goals, humans expect temptresses along good angels, humans deserve to experience both sides of the world. For they work to sustain it and build our future. These angels that give their bodies to them do not sin, but also these angels that don't want to fall and instead choose higher pleasures above the body should feel themselves honored, however pride and humility must walk in pair, or its very easy to loose you're way in both things we see as good and things we see as evil. Were not bound by laws, we are the ones that create them, however this means we took on our backs a responsibility to help these we made subject to these laws." Yahweh made his speech and after it was done he left the „stage" and entered the crowd sitting on the golden cushion, watching as someone else filled his place. Taking a yellow fruit and picking up a knife peeling it slowly, turning it around. Revealing it white inside which he then cut into few pieces, distributing the pieces of the fruit, among the Gods who sat next to him eating one piece himself. Near him a couple was dancing, performing an ancient play. Man and a woman dressed in ancient white silk robes, wearing white masks were dancing performing what appeared to be the story of Adam and Eve, as the woman was tempting the man with an apple like fruit. The man was acting as he was tempted going forward following the woman, grabbing her hand and dancing tango together, which made everyone laugh. Clapping their hands in amusement caused by the awkwardness of the scene, the God's enjoyed themselves, while getting ready to decide about important issues. Painful issues that were discussed causing discomfort among the ones that discussed them. These issues caused frustration and some of them were quick to take offence. Others wanted to show off their power, only adding to this chaos in which everything was already confused. Darkness mingled with the light as all sides of this eternal conflict were gathered here, this was one of these unusual events that almost welcomed everything that's extraordinary. This was the Eternal Convent Of Gods known as ECOG, a special political meeting of these that ruled everything. Floors were lighted up with sparkles of energy, glowing in different colors. Multi-colored sparkles changed into diamonds, falling on the floor creating a loud noise. The bright colored diamonds crashed into floor dividing creating blue flames, which themselves created blue snakes, coming alive in a blue aura squeaking terribly turning everybody's attention to this weird spectacle. Terrifying some Gods while others were merely interested in this strange and un-controlled event. Huge dark redish whirlpools blew through the temple, massive dark currents containing darkness instead of energy, united with blue serpents covering them and helping to materialize, as they continued to growl. Becoming more bigger as the nearby crowd slowly dispersed making way for them. Growling very terribly. The two serpents watched from above on the crowd closely monitoring every actions made by Gods, taking them as hostages. Surprising and shocking the God's who didn't expect anyone bold enough to make that attempt, this was truly insane to take God's as hostages they thought to themselves, while witnessing this strange event. The God's of

course didn't want that to happen, and quickly repelled using all of their power, creating fire attacks and yellow shock waves that were eaten by the blue serpents, attacking the God's themselves but going back without biting, showing that they should stay in their place until the one that summoned them would appear. The crowd of course was terrified as they couldn't understand what was happening, this was something weird. The events unfolded themselves like in a well written book, step by step. A red sphere appeared in the center of the temple slowly growing and becoming entangled in the dark whirlpools, entangling the blue serpents and sucking them slowly into itself as eyes appeared opening. Into the dark sphere creating a grotesque creature that flew up. Opening its jaws growling. Smiling and showing its white teeth it finally spoke „welcome God's of the Afterlife, the rulers of spiritual domains and so called masters of the Universe, long have I awaited to finally be able to speak with you...oh how many eons of years have passed since that disgusting betrayal !” it spoke its words creating another dark surge of winds that entangled dark energy into itself making the creature transform again. Blast of dark energy, exploding and covering every plane possible. Like a dark liquid spilled, covering the golden floor, creating a huge dark energy lake. From which a strange creature started to form. With its grotesque shape similar to nothing ever seen, it slowly started to form into something more familiar, a dark humanoid shape with bizarre red eyes. Which looked at the gathered carefully analysing all present, making sure no one escaped. The creature slowly started to shape into something more humane a man's face formed, it was Galamouth who was manifesting in front of the God's slowly gathering, sucking his own dark energy, he used to burst into this perfect world. Sucking the dark liquid into himself gaining a more realistic shape, making his clothes form themselves and his own body materialize, while making a crazy grin. Laughing madly as he walked forward towards the God's.

„L-L-L-Lord Galamouth, what are you doing here ?” Startled Yahweh asked standing from the golden cushion slowly walking forward to greet him. “we welcome you, but your presence in this ain't necessary my master, please return to your resting place” Yahweh gently demanded while standing in front of him, hitting his walking stick into the floor making it form a light wave that erased the darkness that Galamouth created freeing the God's that were tied up by it „My resting place ? or did you mean my grave, you ungrateful fools ! weak hypocrites, you dare to betray me !” Galamouth yelled while maniacally pointing his hands towards Yahweh „you dared to commit an incredible sin, which won't be ever forgiven, you betrayed me and my ambitions, did you forget why you have been given this power ? it was to carry out my plan” Galamouth proclaimed walking slowly to Yahweh as he stood calmly while being circled by the Dark Lord „your plan would create misery and injustice, furthermore your plan wouldn't ever succeed..please understand to destroy everything is impossible you cannot demand anything that's against other beings, you cannot take things that truly belong to them, you cannot forbid anyone to live their life or even offer salvation if that's against their wish, that's why your plans will always fail” Yahweh explained looking straightly into the Dark Lord's eyes „your plans will always fail because of selfish motivations that pushed you into creating them, despite all justifications you use to delude yourself” Yahweh ended looking boldly into the eyes of darkness as Galamouth smirked and laughed being amused by his logic „so you claim it's my selfish desire to get rid of this whole suffering ? True it's much more easier to just leave this world to rot by itself pretending we God's don't see the corruption created by greed, blood and suffering we will just allow misery to take its place, if you love pain and sorrow

than you shall love my next installment, I shall create a lot more sadness and sorrow destabilising this world's fundamentals only to finally prove how sick this place really is" Galamouth again proclaimed his mad plan smiling with enjoyment as he spoken this words to the God's that were truely terrified of him, purple lightings covered the floor coming throught hitting the nearby fillar. Making it shine in green light producing a colorfull rainbow powder. Which was carried by the wind, creating a colorfull smoke. Symbols appeared in the blue water ,symbols of an old priest like figure from ancient times, dressed in ancient ceremonial outfit he was probably Zechariach a renawn prophet of the ancient world, his image was used in this symbol to carry a certain message. The arcane program of this magical structure, and the interface or more exactly the hidden language the true God master of all creation used to communicate with his believers, subjects and living beeings. Could be described as a language of symbols drawings that might be understanable to all that exist, for God instead of using abstract words we use to communicate with one another, shows merelly things as they are and this is how he delivers his message. In order to understand this symbol we need to understand who was the person that was embedded in it. Who was Zechariach. Because he's the key element in solving this divine puzzle. Zechariach was a certain priest of the course of Abia who was the administrator of one of the temple's in Juda ,on Earth. Who was surving at the altar of incense ,when an angel Gabriel appeared bearing a message for him. The Angel revealed that his wife would give birth to a son, whom he should name John and that this John would become another influential prophet, who shall play an important role in yet another important prophet's life. Zechariach asked the angel for proof, making the angel identify herself and state that because of his disbelief he would be „struck dumb” and „not be able to speak” as the holly books put it. Which eventually happened. This knowledge makes it easy to understand the symbol now ...dosent it? Zechariach appearing in the water might mean this „ Do not loose you're faith” or „Do not be affraid” for the ones who believe in God are always protected by his presence. Also the message might mean „Have strong faith” or you can translate it as a test of faith. God's symbols might be translated in diffèrent ways yet the meaning still remains the same. The water glown beeing lighten up from below by an un-identifiable source of light. That changed its color from yellow to orange and than throught orange to red ,later to green as well finally returning to yellow. While metalic sounds of music were beeing heard signifying this world was govern by ackward laws. Suddenly the room was cleared from all God's making them dissapear taking them away from this dangerous situation, leaving only Yahweh and Galamouth behind. "now there won't be any unnecessary interference" Said Yahweh while making a circle with his walking stick making it glown and create a whirlpool of light that engulphed Lord of the Darkness Galamoth „long have I awaited this" Galamouth smirked making his eyes turn red, as dark hands sprouted from the floor breaking the light ,becoming dark tentacless that tied up a defensive barrier around the Dark Lord. While red energy beams errupted from the floor making Yahweh run away jumping , avoiding beeing hittet. Galamouth touched his barrier in a mad dance manner, making it shine red as from behind Yahweh huge dark snakes jumped out from his shadows trying to eat the Lord of Light forcing him to turn around and move his hands forward while jumping away attacking with a fire spell and burning the hellish serpents, making them squeal in agony as they evaporated into dust. Orange flames spread unto the entire golden floor, encircling the complex structure Galamouth created for his own defense. Water evaporated from the heat creating white steam, that fullled

the temple obscuring the vision. Yahweh stood straightly, having fallen when evading the serpents, kneeling to control his own defence's. Now he was walking straightly towards the water, touching its surface with his walking stick. Making the water boil slowly, creating strange sounds. While Galamouth's tentacles disappeared. Huge orange dragon heads came out from the water, making Galamouth gasp in amazement as the red dragons blow fire at him, forcing the Lord of Darkness to jump away into the air and move his hands forwards, sprouting new tentacles that tied them self on the dragon's head cutting them very swiftly into pieces as the Dark Lord laughed madly in amazement. Creating dark winds that covered the entire shrine changing its structure, red eyes opened in the ceiling as dark shadows appeared walking as if they were drunk multiplying and diving surrounding Yahweh. Who made a circle in the air surrounding himself with light, to ward off the darkness created by the mad angel of darkness. The light exploded like a shockwave pushing back the shadows that started to scream terribly, each of the shadows were a soul that was thrust into the eternal pits and now were used by the dark lord as a walking weapon, trying to corrupt the soul of the wise philosopher, with its own greed. But Yahweh's hearth was strong enough to withstand such temptations. His light being an essence that purified them and allowed to pass into the next dimensions as sparkles of light covered these shadows making them disappear one by one, The light covered the Dark Lord who was flying above the scene tying him up as he screamed gathering a red aura in himself to break, the light's hold on his body crushing it into tiny pieces. Throwing dark spheres billions appearing in the air trying to hit the Lord of Light who swiftly, evaded being hit by them trying to run away into the maze of pillars, being chased by the Dark Lord who flew above. While the whole temple started to transform into an un-belivable structure, a kind that was only possible in the world where dreams were created, as stairs that lead to nowhere appeared creating a multidimensional complex structure of mazes, where everywhere lead to nowhere. Covered in white smoke that appeared out of nowhere adding more mysticism to the whole scenery. Explosions of fire from an underground volcano pass through, brighting the stairs on which Galamouth was now standing, as the temple changed into a huge stairway, inside of a rectangular tower and in its center fire erupted its flame going upwards creating a wall, that only allowed to use the steps by walking down, forcing Galamouth to run after Yahweh, who was escaping below. Trying to avoid the rage of the mad Dark Lord. „you will not escape !!!” screamed Galamouth in his fury. „come to meet you're destiny ...a deserved death from my hands !!” he screamed laughing madly being a bit burned by the fire shaking it off. Explosions shook the tower. Making the madness continue. Making the heat rise and the flames shine in orange color amazing the Dark Lord „Come on wait for me, the time is near” Galamouth proclaimed being lost in his madness, as the force's of destructions were unleashed in this closed dimensions, destroying it from the inside „come my greatest weapon...come into existence the flames of Ragnarok !!!” Screamed Galamouth looking at his side „oh where is Dietrich when I need him?” Galamouth asked while creating black blades in his hands touching them with fire making it disperse, as the blades slowly sucked in the flames into itself. Forcing the structure to yet again transform and change its shape, making the mad Lord enjoy it even more, as Yahweh was avoiding being impaled by spears and lightings that came from above being created by the Dark Lord himself. The Platforms in the tower were created from the floors, from which staircases were divided falling off, forcing Yahweh to jump from platform to



platform as Galamouth send a pink power wave unto him forcing Yahweh to erect a silver electromagnetic shield to deflect the attack. Which made Galamouth jump away first above and then below Yahweh. Making Yahweh jump to him and take him on in a magic duell „I will never let you complete that desire !!” screamed Yahweh pushing Galamouth of the edge with the use of the golden lightings „You and what army ? !!” Galamouth replied falling down ,on the next floor escaping into the darkness hiding in it. „stop hiding like a coward,face me in a fair fight” Demanded Yahweh „no thank you” replied Galamouth creating dark tornado's that attacked Yahweh making him jump few floors avoiding,being hit by the dark air currents.While the darkness took the place of the fire, replacing it with a huge dark tornado,that Galamouth created to conceal himself.The winds blew with incredible powers and speed giving out a chilling sound,Galamouth's true terror was unleashed in this moment.While the tower collapsed because it couldn't resist the incredible force being summounded inside it.Rubble fallen down making Yahweh yet again run for his life as energy blasts came out from the dark tornado trying to hit him,as if shooted out from a cannon,while Yahweh created multi colored shields to protect himself. Lightings hit the platforms , making Yahweh jump away even more faster, as a mad powerfull laughter was being heard yet again. A powerfull explosion of darkness finally destroyed the tower ,pushing Yahweh into the darkness, making him fall ,as the dark whirlpools of air followed him ,Yahweh created a sphere of light inside being safe from the darkness that quickly surrounded ,the white glowing sphere,as both Darkness and Light were gathering ,Darkness gathered along the light created by Yahweh to protect himself,while the Light went upwards forcing Galamouth to create a sphere of Darkness and sealing himself inside ,both being surrounded by the opposite a very dangerous situation.Where both of them were pushed into opposing the environment,being an equalising force,as the dimension became a symbol of equality. Seen from a certain perspective it, indeed created it and everyone who would be present would notice it.That was the power of the Universe , and the Power of God who created this universe,that is why all should praise his name, for he alone can topple the might and make them become weak, this is God's true power , be afraid of it,be humble pray and remember these that oppress will become oppressed !! For that is the fate of the strong to become weak, and the fate of weak is to become strong !! and this is a perpetual circle so everything change's constantly, that is the will of the Almighty GOD the true creator of the Universe ! Be mindfull of these descriptions for they too serve a certain purpose, that will be revealed to you in time by our holy patron, the master of all God. Everything change's and is in constant motion, so was this bizzare situation that imprisoned both of them, as the manifestation slowly dissappeared, allowing them to continue their fight, to decide who would be the victor of this sacred fight. Yahweh send a huge light energy into the Dark Lord as he merely squeched protecting himself by using a blue barrier this time. Creating a red strong wave that like blood covered slowly the area ,dispersing as if spilled into every atom of this dimension's manifestation. While Yahweh created an orange net,that like spiders web engulfed the entire dimension,trying to sustain it.While Galamouth used it as an opportunity and transformed his red blood,into red spiders that entered the web chasing Yahweh. Who slowly run on the orange strings being surrounded by greedy red spiders,While Galamouth himself morphed into a gigantic dark spider that squeched terribly.walking down the web getting closer to a surrounded and a bit desperate Yahweh. Who Standed straightly and engulfed his walking stick into bright light „Lord offer me Salvation !!” Yahweh

asked giving out an praying,suddenly beeing engulfed by light beeing morphed into a beautifull Golden butterfly which spread its wings and flew off the web,while Galamouth squeaked terribly not beeing able to do anything,morphing into a black moath,he followed the Golden Butterflu spitting at it with acid,trying to hit it ,But Yahweh was able to avoid beeing hitted. Dissapearing into light making Galamouth stop, as he didn't want to be purified he squeaked in fear. Engulphing himself in darkness that created a huge wall, fit for defense but not for an attack, as the light from the lord, quite literary ! was gaining more space dividing the darkness. „Curse you be the Powerfull one of the Universe...my time will yet come to stop you're dellusion !!” Screamed Galamouth in agony seeing, how terribly he was loosing this duell,thinking he had an advantage. „The Darkness is on the rise, the sorrow will destbilize you're game, the cruel truth shall be revealed...answer me the one that always watchess and yet remain silent when needed themost,why do you hide and take no form, no shape for yourself, why don't you answer the prayers of these that are praying to you in you're churchess,you think you done enough to be worshipped ? I shall destroy you !! , Destroy you're dreams and this lies , forever this world will return to nothingness from which it was created !!” screamed theatrically Galamouth, not knowing God answered his prayers many time's yet he wasn't able to see them,not thinking of simple kindness that was offered to him many times as important or worth of noticing. Poor Galamouth didn't even understand that, which made him weak more weaker than he would ever admit. „poor Galamouth , you will never understand the truth about this world,beeing engulfed in you're hatred,you hate all living things...looking for faults you cannot notice the love given even to you by many,these that want to be close with you,these that think of you warmly,they do exist mad lord,they are near and help you work on you're prepostous dreams ! and yet you defy theire existence ! deny theire goodness, you don't appreciate the help that was given to you” Yahweh answered the angry words, of his former teacher, looking with pity at the hideous black moath that carried Galamouth's wounded soul, he knew the agony his former mentor was going through,but couldn't do anything to heal him,this made Yahweh sad and tremble a bit from both sadness and fear. Remembering the times of ancient past, when he was one of many street children under the care of this strange dark priest, who would tell them stories that appeared as fairy tales to them. This relationship twisted because of eternity into hatred . Why did it happen ? why did it go that way ? Were the questions on Yahweh's mind. The memories of an old ancient town, in a desert,guarded by huge defense's ,Earth's distant past ? or perhaps future ? This was Yahweh's own home the place he longed ,despite living in much better conditions. These were sparkles of memories that clouded his mind for a while. What was the mystery of this universe ? Why is this story beeing forwarded to you of all people ? Haven't you noticed yet ? These that read this story be schocked, you're reading a story that describes the future of you're civilisation, the universe. The mystery of our world is locked inside the very reality that surrounds you the reader look for the answers yourself as they are near you. I told you once , you the readers are taking a part in the events that are described, you think you're not in danger ? don't be too cocky, you must stay and help us win this ETERNAL WAR the battle is real and its about you. Even if you close this now,this won't make you safer for you have now been made aware of the events that were happening beyond you're imagination, this was a trap !! You are now a part of the events that unfold in this world ,this is true madness and reality. You're souls and energy take part in it as well , this is why telling you about this story is a great importance for

us, for by making you read it or listen to it, we make you participate in this battle. This is the true purpose of culture that itself is a powerful weapon. Was it a surprise for you, do not be afraid, take your chance be a part of this world and our story, witness the battle of eternity in your own lives! be amazed! be enlightened understand yourself and the knowledge you always possessed. This truth is inside you open your own souls and minds and see clearly what cannot be seen before! this is the gift we give to humanity and all mankind. Suddenly a ray of yellow light came out of the skies, surprising both Galamouth and Yahweh, the rays joined together creating a star, that shined in a yellow shining brightly as a woman's voice was heard speaking „This is Hecate speaking... Lord of light Yahweh are you still there?... do you hear me? we are initiating a rescue now, please fly into the star, we will pull you out of this bubble” Hecate's voice was heard calling from above. Making Yahweh fly towards the star, entering it. While Galamouth angrily screamed and frantically sent his tentacle's trying to capture the star, as it disappeared taking Yahweh out of this dimension ending the battle. „curse you witch!!” Screamed Galamouth as the dimension collapsed and he himself disappeared in darkness. Galamouth was at his height in frustration, cursing everyone and everything in this and any other worlds. His fury was incredible combined with gathered sorrow, these emotions came from incredible wounds his soul gathered. Galamouth's evil came from incredible pain, hatred is born from pain, hurt pride and shattered ego, or more exactly a very hard blow to one's ego combined with the inability to let go of it, or understand why one's ego should be sacrificed, or because of the extent of the sacrifice that is too large. No body likes to give away something he or she believe are vital to his or her existence, and if we got to do it constantly, giving up on our rewards for all the hard work we do, don't you think we won't get fed up with it, this is one of these vital elements that push people and demons towards darkness. Of course this is just one cause that does take it too far, reverting souls to darkness making them an instrument of destruction, everything changes unless we don't understand the right principals to cultivate the goodness, and in order to do so we need to learn about the balance. Balance means attaining both things for yourself and others not denying any needs. It's important to find the path in the middle, to remain connected to all things. Ignorance creates most of evil and darkness in this world, also greed that creates ignorance helps demons and people to convert to darkness bringing more pain and sorrow. How to defeat it, you must defeat the cause of this darkness, kill the pain and heal from sorrow. It's not as easy as it sounds, helping these that don't want any help, being proud to admit that they too need it, is often impossible, and since darkness is a sickness one must be strict like a very good doctor in order to cure others from it, it's very hard to convert others towards light, and you have to be humble in order for yourself to not be taken over by it, also you need to know when to step back and allow someone better to take care of the problems, as there are better than you at this task, do not be proud of yourself and not dare to carry everything on your own shoulders, this too leads to evil, you're working in a team even if you think you're alone there are always others helping you, even if you don't see it, remember one of them is God and others like you are his ministers. For we all are a team. Guided by the light of the Universe, the life creating power, so there is truly nothing to be afraid. Silencing the ego itself isn't that easy actually, many of us feel unpretended that we were on the losing side of the world and this view is correct, for the evil always makes us lose, but this loss in itself is an illusion, remember what you see, this what shines and appears to be healthy is

really decay, System whores are all full of this decay, masquaring ugliness as beauty trying to make us believe this is glory, we must reject these kinda ideas at all cost, nothing that is guided by greed how noble it appears leads to happiness and good, this is all a trap and we must be aware of these illusions and alert others. Others will not want to believe it, they can't imagine that their world is cruel, they think egoistically believing that if they're not hurt others don't suffer at all, or not even caring that others suffer and this is wrong, as it easily creates divisions that are used by the system to enslave us. System and evil enslave us by creating divisions, killing unity under any pretext, how noble it appears brings seeds of darkness and weakens us, for we should be organised and united in a true union than system itself would be unnecessary. But this kinda union ain't possible in great places, might be achieved in small thought like in families, if we build them on love instead of law it will reach much better fruits, even though learning to respect law is good, that doesn't mean we need to take law above love this is wrong, this becomes an instrument of evil and that's a mistake. Law is only used for binding that is wrong, law should be a pact between the rulers and their subjects not means of oppression, unfortunately it's the other way around always. The same goes to religions, unless they help to unite and teach about love, they're wrong, religions that promote war are these that serve darkness. Currently all religions I know off mostly serve the dark side. Institutionalizations of religion by building churches is wrong, they should not be institutions but houses for praying, even a simple wooden house would do a better job in being a true church, than a golden temple, for WHERE IS GOLD THERE'S ALWAYS CORRUPTION. Luckily there's an irony in all of this, system always wants to be above everyone, in high luxury its best than to cut its rope that are tied to the ground where we ordinary people and demons live and let it fly into the skies where its destroyed like a hot air balloon. The true paradise can be created below, in the lowest ranks of mortal and man, because that's the only place system won't come looking for it, as it detests everything that is low it closes its eyes for everything that happens there, and remains highly ignorant of moves done there, this is where we can create an union, and then destabilize the system making it fly off with its own lies. Evil itself can be fooled in the same manner let it think it won, and become weaker than penetrate and transform the darkness to light. It cannot be done by swords, but it can be done by a union. This is the power of love despite being paradoxical, works effectively relying on evil itself on the incredible obsession about someone, than that someone should simply give up despite being strong, become one with the evil and take the evil one in possession by wit, slowly using darkness itself to transform it into light. The paradox of Love is indeed possible, if we understand love is the same as deception, but only in certain matters. Do not be afraid to lie, but also at the same time be very honest with you're oppressor and victim, be harsh and yet very delicate and subtle, and do it only if you yourself want it, for otherwise this weapon or more exactly special ability won't work, and this miracle cannot be performed. It's a very hard way of doing things reserved only for real pros do not try it at home ! Until you know you're ready. This won't come easy, and its effects cannot be foreseen, this is a gamble with all dangers. REMEMBER THAT, this is a path only those that are truly RESPONSIBLE and strong in spirit can take.

## Chapter 3

### „The Magical structure“

The depths of the darkness is a state of incredible sorrow, and also a lack of light. Is darkness nothingness than? What is darkness, with what kind of force we usually associate it with? Darkness is a force usually associated with division. So why is division seen in such a negative manner? Why dividing is seen as something negative, while gathering is seen in a more positive light? Are we gathering or dividing? What is the most important possession that we should gather? Is it money? Prestige? Luxury items? or maybe something else? Why is it that people who are shown possessing all are in fact weaker than these, that are depicted to possess nothing. What is true possession? Something of true value is hidden from the eyes of masses. It's not that it's hidden on purpose, but because of the lack of knowledge the masses possess. They're not thought about true values, because the system needs them to be blind fools, how else would it hold control over so many souls, how else would the system hold its authority? Ignorance is the best way to control the weak minded. Even though the treasures are putted right in front of their nooses, these fools will see them as mere garbage. The garbage holds true treasures, yet the system depicts it as trash. To understand and see the true treasures we need to pay attention to what lies in our garbage, in both physical and metaphysical sense. So what are the things you're forced to throw away, by the system? These are your true treasures keep them for yourself and share with others, do not let the system have its own way. Do not let blind desperation take hold of you, even though system will use all means to break your soul, how else would it hold authority? It first needs to destroy a person's soul, break dreams, corrupt the soul, crush their free will and force the person to kill themselves in a spiritual sense, to denounce their own ideals and their dreams as naivete. To mock themselves and humiliate each other just to prove the system's way is the only one. The system doesn't reward these that serve it, merely divide create more divisions that create them again. This is true division, we create division in ourselves weakening our will, and strengthening the system's hold over this world. That's how over millennia's, people and immortals sustained this wicked beast. To defeat it, we all need to take possession of the true treasures, that will free us from its reign. But what are these true treasures, you first need to open your eyes. Try looking at the world and its people differently. Than from a fresh perspective, you'll see the true treasures. You only need to take some for yourself and share them among others, true treasures are meant to be shared. Sharing isn't division, it's making possession by a whole group, family or society. Such treasures that are in possession of many will last eternally, and despite it being divided it will multiply to cover the needs of all that possess such treasure. Just like the bread a prophet called Jesus, used to feed the hungry. Instead of disappearing

the breed multiplied to cover all that were hungry. Such treasures that cover the need of many, how small and naive it looks are true treasures. That sustain all that possess, despite the fact they constantly share it among others. The ability to share is a strength that can defeat greed. Sharing is an act of obeying God's will therefore it cannot be punished. It should be allowed only the whores of the system, fear sharing, only for them sharing is an illegal act. But such law that prohibits sharing, which is God's will shouldn't be obeyed. For no law is more important than God. God's will is more important than human law, despite the fact the system will use the law to persecute good. Such greed holds no authority and laws made to support system greed. Shouldn't be obeyed. Law that denies God, even if supported by high priests is an act of war. Therefore a peaceful cultural revolution in defence of God is justified, let the system know that true believers of God, not church devotees will stand by this freedom, defending the true treasures and places where, we all can share them. By creating new media's and more places, by creating true culture, that will tend to needs of these that are treated as garbage, because they dared to think, and are not blind to the evil of the system whores. Despite the fact they will be persecuted and mocked, despite the fact the system will use all resources to combat the truth, even sickness might befall to these that dare to speak. This sickness in the service of System whores will be defeated by God, who shall protect his followers from death and guide them in truth. Do not fear of the suffering, for this is a mere curse used by the system, let send the whores of the system a message. We know that you the whores of the system are the cause of our pain, sorrow and sickness. We will not bend to your wickedness. Your authority means nothing nothing in front of the God's divine will, and you shall suffer and lose your support system, and system whores your rule is about to end. The system was a structure, created by man to distribute God's gifts among themselves, yet because of the corruption that rooted in their hearts, the whole structure became corrupted as well. Becoming an instrument of evil and incredible oppression, tyranny that wasn't foreseen, or perhaps all of it was planned and calculated into something we know as our existence. This is the truth that is being shown to these who read this scripture or listen to the audio-book, this is how mere words can portray something grand and powerful just as the events we were part of. Walking in this darkness, covered in multicolored dust as we were trying to move forward from this debris. The scene we saw was simply unimaginable. It was hard to describe, darkness and colorful smoke everywhere. As if we entered into a cloud, yet we were inside this building still walking in one of the hallways surrounded by hieroglyphic symbols, this time a man naked was lying after coupling with a beautiful woman, who was revealed to be the devil holding a child, the result of the mating. A man was probably of high prominence, either dying or simply lying on the bed naked while the devil held their child, the child was probably the Anti-Christ, the fabled anti prophet, that was to appear on earth. I still didn't know what it meant, or why these symbols appeared on the walls accompanying us in the journey, I wondered what God wanted to tell us as we made our way through the darkness. We were surrounded by this darkness engulfed in the smoke, being able to breathe. Despite the fact the debris was all around us. Looking into the distance seeing light, a path way or a door that was open, we slowly made our way there. We found ourselves in something that appeared to be a futuristic lab, computer device implanted in the walls of this huge research center. We didn't know what was this facility used for, but there was no one to guard it. We entered it being shocked by the colossal size of it. The blue and silver equipment was placed in the middle of this

huge room, working and calculating equations that were fundamental to the dark spells used to control the whole process. In four corners huge glass pipes with boiling water being pumped upwards. We walked in the middle of this strange lab not being bothered by any security just as if, for some reason we would be granted access into this strange place. In the center of the room glass tubes were placed, a hundred or more in them, people and demons nude. In some form of hibernation, on their bodies I could notice the same strange symbols, both Dawn and Misa had. Above us a huge machine was flying, it being the sole caretaker of this strange lab. Not bothered by our presence it slowly moved on the ceiling observing the whole room. Conducting experiments on the subjects in the tubes, making the tube with the subjects glow in different colors. I looked closely at this whole procedure „Dawn can you tell me where we are now ?” I asked my comrade looking at her reaction, wondering did she know anything about this research center. Dawn looked around, as she shrugged. "I got no idea.." She said feeling a bit awkward. She then began to make her way forward, as she peeked in to see the others. That were locked in these tubes, sleeping in some kind of trance, covered with yellow, orange, red and blue fluids. She touched the surface of the tubes, and looked back at me. Uncertain of whether to continue to move forward. I was looking surprised at the tubes myself, while they were giving out a chilling boiling sound, making me think that the ones inside there were boiled, fortunately they were not. „So Dawn do you remember anything ? tell me dear what happened here” I asked the girl yet again, hoping for a reply as I gazed on the subject in the tube, a man with brown hair. Similar to the one we met earlier. She closed her eyes as she touched the tubes, but still nothing came to mind. She only opened her eyes and shook her head, in response to my question. As we continued to stare at the tubes. Obviously the subjects in them came from different nations, worlds and times. The brown haired man was an elf, that used to live in a fantasy world, Dawn stared at him with wide eyes. She started slowly remembering something. Slowly in her head images were formed alongside feelings of warmth, heat a lot of grey steam, strange figures and unknown to her research. Then all the sudden the feeling all fell, as she came back to her senses. I looked at her and asked "what's the matter Dawn ?" I looked carefully at the girl as she was suddenly sweating. "I don't feel so good." She replied, while glancing around. „oh ok you wanna rest for a while ?" I said while hugging her gently, first putting Misa on the floor hoping she would finally wake up „ok dear breathe steadily" I said to her, gently petting her hair slowly cuddling. „it will be fine" adding. The silver blue walls were in fact elaborate computer devices, everything was so advanced! and very hard to describe, most of the things used in this research lab, were seen by me for the first time. Making me amazed at how advanced combination magic and technology could create. How well it was provided in this structure that only mimicked a skyscraper building!! this was something that was rare to see, even in such advanced futuristic metropolis. I always saw but a mere fraction!!! of the whole truth. The whole truth couldn't be comprehended by my small mind? but step by step I learned more, there was a lot of time and this adventure had only started making me wonder how much surprises this mysterious structure held. I still continued looking at Dawn who breathed slowly, calmly looking at the tube in which the man was trapped, the glass like tube was standing on some kind of dark box which turned out to be the computer interface that controlled the environment inside the tube, our „protector" the giant rectangular machine, that slid above us on some kind of track, built into the lab's ceiling. I would say 45 or 78 meters above our position, came above us and a dark cable sprung

out from one of the holes that opened, entering the computer console, making the computer program something as we could notice how the pressure inside the tube was changing, noticing wounds I realized this was somekinda medical facility, in which the subjects were given medical treatment, during check ups and researched on, but would be released later on. Well the idea of them being imprisoned in them forever appeared to be absurd, as the subjects would die or have their muscle deteriorated. So there had to be a place to let them 'run around' perhaps the sky scraper was devised in such manner to allow their subjects to move freely while keeping them away from the exit. Or perhaps they were specially choosed, because outcasts and these that are betrayed by the system have no home to return to, so they wouldn't have a need to escape from a place that provided care for them, willingly becoming prisoners and subjects to the research done in the darkness of the universe. You gotta love the way I putted it all together for you to read !! But the situation was like that, like a play or a movie, it was an interesting adventure and I really did enjoy my self a bit despite the dangers it carried. Everyone wants to have one moment like that, scary mysterious were you're thrown into an unussual event. But what would you do if you're wish suddenly came true ? What would you do if you woken up inside this sky scraper like me here ? Well I walked into it my self, but what about you ? You sleep in you're bed than suddenly you wake up in the one I slept before, in a foreign unknown teritory without anything familiar, or a clear understnable reason for you why you there? believe me this thought is enough for you to tremble, you would be affraid !! most of us would panic not understanding I'm no different, but since I existed for as long as I did, I merelly got adjusted. First I lived my ordinary way as a human than once I died I moved to another level, slowly step by step started achiving great things. Thats why if you want to have adventures, you must understand preperations are necessary, everything big beguns with small insignificant things. Do not belittle this story you read or listen too because my way of writing isn't perfect. But its an insignificant start of something that with time will become grand. I suppose all of you think adventures and unnussual things happen just like that, its not true it takes time long preperations, now I'll tell you the truth ! I knew I was walking into a trap. Walking in it to try to make a difference, I too was warned by Alpha that Galamouth would reappear few days after the first described adventure ended, and under the guidance of Alpha and other God's including Yahweh and Bezebub I started preparing my self, learning about Galamouth training and becoming ready to make another move, it took us 75 years but it came. Thats how leanghty booring preperations lead to un-ussual events only than you might face and try yourself remember that !! Great victories begun with small ignored attempt thats the truth, seed needs to grow in order to become a tree and that needs time, for this the illusion of time was created allowing the seeds to grow and become huge tree's. Dawn was breathing steadily and now I turned my attention to her. She still continued to glaze around, as she said, "Is its alright for me to burn this place down?" ..... „No Dawn we don't want to be noticed, besides why do you want to burn it down ? Tell me Dawn what happened here” I interogated my friend looking at her and smiling. „you can tell me right ?” I asked and looked around wondering will the guards finally show up. "I just detest this place so much.." She trail off, looking around. "Someone is coming" She said calmly. „geez you could help me carry her” I replied taking Misa into my arms and looking around „so who is coming here” I asked Dawn wondering whether we will have to hide, fight or will that other person become our ally. "Carry misa and go on first, I will catch up later then." She simply shrug and pushed me to



move on. „hold on what are you going to do ?” I asked suprised and wondering why she wanted to face,who ever it was alone ,looking in her eyes I could see her determination. She really wanted me out of her way,but why was the thing that made me pounder for a while before moving on.She looked back as she saw us walking away. Turning around, to face what was up coming. As a figure started to appear, a guy with long black came walking in. He glare at Dawn and chuckle, "What a weak looking girl." he said. Without knowing, what horror he was about to face.She swing her hand, as a big sword appear. Pointing the tip of the sword to the long hair guy, "You digust me." She said. While taking a couple of steps forward towards him. The man moved back a bit smirked and his red eyes glown in a creepy manner „our master Galamouth calls you” The man replied smiking in a creepy and inhumane manner.She tilit her head, "Who's that?" She said walking even more closer to him. Making the man jump away a bit „the one who gived you that power !..Galamouth is the reason all of us are still alive !!”Screamed the man starting to be affraid of Dawn's power seein the green aura that appeared from her body,we looked at her from a distance,hiding behind one of the tubes.Putting Misa next to a dark computer console it lights glowing in red and pink lights.She simply chuckled and started to laugh, "Whats makes you think that I am apart of you people?" She questioned, drawing the sword and stabbing it into his neck. Smirking, as she pulls the sword out and grabs his neck. Gripping it tighter, as a wide grin crease over her face. The man growled in agony „you gotta be !” Yelled in desperaion crying from pain as he started vomiting blood „you have the symbols its all in the symbols” He cried more and used a schockwave that pushed Dawn away makin her hit the wall as the man grabbed his throat „you'll pay for that wrench !” he screamed"But I am not a wrench."she said while moving foward and grabbing his face , smashing it into the wall. "I just happen to be a really evil demon." she added and smashes his head more. She takes out a dagger, turns him around and cuts his stomach open. Twisting and turning her bare hands inside of his stomach and dragging out his long and slimey intesine. I looked at it a bit amused. „what a dangerous girl” My dark persona replied as her ruthlessness got me on making me want to get her and slowly conquer her. Knowing we had some time I wondered if I could have my way. Leaving Misa alone for a moment I walked over to Dawn. „you're starting to interest me” I smirked evilly „ I want you” I felt something taking hold of my spirit. Dawn tilt her head as she tosses the guy body away, poking my forehead. "Are you alright?" she asked, while drawing back her bloody fingers to lick. „yes Im fine dear ...tell me how old are you ?” I asked and brought my head closer t her forehed „its sucha lonely cold place isn't ?”I asked looking into her eyes closefully trying to hypnotise her in order to get a hold of her. My pervercy was at its high."Hmm? I am 16 this year, why?" she replied and smiled without knowing what was happening. I slowly pushed my self on her, my senses going wild.Planning to enjoy my self knowing she wouldn't be able to resist. „how about we play a bit” I kissed cheek gently and lovingly wanting to make her one of my women. I had such plans since the begining and this was an isolated spot. There was no where to escape,the only ones able to interfere where the machines that minded their own buisness,tending to their subjects which could be the other ones but were unconcious and of course Misa who also was lying unconcious,unless anyone would appear quickly I could have my way with the girl. I wanted to be gentle and playfull not violent,her streanght would be a good bost to my power ,her and Misa could be an usefull allies or even become my sexual partners thats why I kept them at my side. Noticing that Dawn didn't understand my intentions it

delighted me ,because I could have my way without any resistance she would only start fighting after the main event happens. I slowly hugged her touching her breasts under her gray cloth. Only now I realized she was naked under it having no cloths. Unlike Misa who weared a witch attire,both of them making me curious ,Misa and Dawn were of peculiar races, Misa a sorceress and Dawn a dark demon, but not the traditional style. She wasn't a subcubuss but propably a child of one of these secret societies , that sprung all over the galaxy.Its really interesting to play with these kinda people. The Adventure didn't require me to be serious, althought the situation was serious ,I learned that everything we see is in reality a illusion, all of what happens is merelly a game,so its ok to have fun with it instead of takin it whole seriously and falling into despair. After all how many times i failed and how many times I succeseed. After beeing throught so much different events I leame to accept both my streanghts and my Imitations. If there's something to achieve in this mess than I should look for it is what I thought. Yes after suffering death and realizing it dosen't end my existence, after yng billion times already and yet beeing able to exist on a dfferen't plane. I realized living is like watching television when one movie ends I tum on the next one. Existence of the ones who comprehended the truth is like that as well, one booring life ends we can move on to something more interesting,therefore bounding ourselves to the material plane and the system as the only way of existing is an idiocy, existence was before society and will continue if societies dies ,for existence and lives dosen't limit itself to us and our way of living, there are other beeings and species in the vast universe and dimensions and the too continue to exist. So if we feel uncomfortable with this way,we can try another way. Change the system or build an enclave share the wisdom that resides in our hearth. This is the true purpose of culture and love ,true love can be anything even something hideous as rape can be a sign of love,because of fear humans and even some demons limit themselves by cretinmg opressive laws. Greed rules because of fear ,sometimes people are afraid of true relationships not everywhere o actually nowhere and in no case law should be biding ,instead falling to ones insticts and natural way should be preffered ,as long as we can understand the dark ways of our soul, and what we are and accept that some part of our existence may appear disgusting ,however its only a label the so called civilised society gives it, sometimes people in their ignorance judge to quickly theres a difference in every situation. Even if it looks similiar it may appear diffent ,to much tragedies are created by rigoristic laws and opression and this won't change. Adleast its not possible for humans to understand it so quickly but once they die they realize that what they fear is the only reason holding them back. If people you the readers realize that everything you hold value including keeping a face will eventually dissapear as you're mortal and need to die than ask yourself, why keep yourself from having fun, for whom you shall store this money,prestigue. I as a human was a bit like you guys too, but than I realized that its worth nothin, yet as long as I lived as a human was alway trying to get possession of the material world, and despite I cursed God for it he gived me very little of it just to barelly survive. But he granted me knowlede of what I can become and despite me not beeing entirely sure will the these things imageden finally happen. Slowly I made it into reality gaining true treasure and the right to take possession of everything I desire. Not just from the world I was born but from entire existence, even written or created characters could become real and mine. I could posses everyone that died, but too a certain limits also these that lived, one condition was that they must be just like ,outcasted and unnecessary in their worlds, beeings that system thrown away like trash. Than its

ok for me to take them and make them mine, also these that created too much sorrow and too much evil could be mine as punishment for their sins. In case of ordinary or the righteous than the condition was their consent but not in all cases if I for example would hurt a good person by my actions than its best I do nothing. Just as all immortals and demons I'm forbidden to interfere with third rated worlds and ancient civilisations too much. Because there people cannot defend themselves against demons that's why we must step in and discipline ones breaking the rules. I slowly started touching Dawn's body gently undressing my lower parts to ensure freedom of movement and hugged her slowly. Kissing her neck. Meanwhile Misa slowly woken up, being lured by some visions that were most likely created by the Dark Lord himself, she looks at the shining moon ...with her snow white face and her bloody red eyes...she came closer to one person...and then she bite him....she smiles evilly and continue looks at the beautiful shine velvet moon. The vision made her lunatical and attack computer table as she slowly bit it, sucking thinking it was a person. The floor switched colors from grey to orange, as I not noticing slowly wanted to make my way with Dawn, Misa was surrounded by a blue aura trapped in an illusion spell. Her eyes red or orange and hair covered in somekinda dark web, something took control over her. Back to me and Dawn, She tilted her head, wondering what was I doing. Confused, she gently lied on the orange floor, the floor was interesting as it started showing symbols, I gently took of her cloths shed my self on her kissing her breast ,gently inserting my dick inside her pussy making her scream. Enjoying the softness of her dark skin playing with her beautiful pink hair, enjoying true sexual ambrosia, the forbidden and immortal fruit that wasn't allowed for anyone, true pleasure disgusted by the whores of the system was mine. She startled a little and try to push me away, but I went deeper doing something that could get me in trouble if I dealt with the ones that belong to the system, but could still be troublesome if the greedy whores decided that, I was mad with my lust and pushed my self hurting the girl a bit as my essence broken inside her barriers making her bleed a bit as I moaned in extasy enjoying the hideous thing I made to her. The egyptian like symbols appeared on the green floor as blue steam filled the lab, grey machines monitored the room ,looking like bugs that filled the area, sending out blue rays that were invisible swarming over to Misa which was being taken over by something, I screamed in pleasure as a bit of blood touched the yellow this time floor, perhaps it being a catalyst of certain events that was to take place, as the red blood was sucked into the floor, strange symbols appearing on the floor as the blood was analysed alongside my semen, a really disgusting event. But this was a palace of evil after all. Her eyes widen as I thrust more into her, she bite her lower lips while letting out a slight scream. Tears brimmed at the side of eyes, her vision became blur. I ended it swiftly and hugged her gently after realising a bit how terrible this was to her. Now I was sorry I couldn't understand what took over me to make me so obsessed, this wasn't the first time I was like that, but this time it wasn't coincidence it was the same with Dawn when she killed that man, the machines went back to the one that was above us ,the floor became grey. „I'm sorry” I replied. Only Misa remained possessed. Engulphed in green and grey current , her face twisted as we looked at her with horror. Whirlpools of darkness surrounded her pale hands as yellow energy sparkles formed lightings in them. Dawn stared at her and looking back at me ,begging that I help her new friend. She felt a tug in her heart as she saw Misa up ahead being held on. Dawn got herself up from the floor and pull on her clothes. She ran towards Misa and tries to help her. Misa was growling not being able to regain who she was. Her eyes glowing in blue

eyes screamin terribly as somethin or someone took hold of her soul. Dawn ran even closer to Misa, while pulling her away from the my self. She hug on to Misa hoping that she would wake up. Misa was going berseek her mind was crazy, her thouhts rushing towards undescrible centers. Dawn looked at me, not knowing what to do. I slowly dressed my self and smirked „my my this place is full of interesting events isn't it Lord of Darkness Galamouth” I answered to the red eyed Misa making her smirk „ I complement you're ability to see truth self proclaimed count of Chaos its been a while” Misa possesed answered and bowed down in a mocking manner „please forive my inability to meet with you in person but as you see Im busy at the moment, I invite you to join me above” Misa or more exactly Galamouth who controled her replied. „and what is it that you're so busy with lord ?” I asked the question hoping to get some answers „ You see the art of creation and destruction isn't necessary two things, in truth !! if you want to destroy first you must create and if you want to create first you must destroy that is change, to free mankind from itself we must first get ridd of the illusion it has created and start from a new fresh perspective” Answered Galamouth using Misa voice walking forward as the floor on which we were standing started glowin red brihtly blood red and egyptians symbols appeared, the symbols shown ancient faraons and priests ,piramids and God's eye that watched from above and other dimensions. Dawn simply sat down on the floor as she pops out some popcorn to eat. While she continues to see the 'show' infornt of her. Suprising both of us with this act „hey I want some popcorn too !! ” I whined a bit hoping to get some from Dawn, she herself was surrounded by the strange symbols while Misa controled by Galamouth growled a bit and smirked „ I would advice not to underistamete the danger of this situation, Im also thankful for you're DNA we gathered just now it will benefit my ambition” Galamouth replied usin Misa looking amused throuht Misa eyes at the hiliarious situation that was created in front of him. Dawn appeared behind me as she shook the popcorn. "You want it? Come and get it firsstttt." She traied off while chuckling. I looked at her and than looked at Misa „hey wait what about Misa and that lunatic !!" I yelled to her as Misa controled by Galamouth walked behind me „ who do you call a lunatic ?” Asked Galamouth throuht Misa „Just some guy that controls a weak girl and plans total destruction I wonder do you know him ?” I teased the Mad Lord a little bit makin him smile throuht Misa „ and this comes from a guy that calls himself the count of chaos a tittle that is rightfully mine and rapes every female he can lay his eyes on ?” Asked Galamouth makin me blush „ ey thats different ..well adleast Im not waging a war that will kill billions !” I replied „Well straighting you're facts Im not doing that also, Im using the weak minded greedy fools of a certain corporation for this task ,but do not worry once they realize my true purpose they will tremble at the high of my betrayal, corruption is a usefull tool money has decieved them and it shall lead them to theire death” Galamouth replied using Misa's voice. Dawn tilted her head as she approached Misa and pokes her forehead, "Ne~ Let my friend go." Galamouth looked at her smiling and laughing „let you go, but you all belong to me ! as a part of my ambition tools or pawns that are used to benefit everything I produce ,you're freedom is designed by me ,you can only fill the roles I have forseen. Originally I wanted to reclaim both of you ,but I realized that letting you do as you please might be more benefitial to the whole plan, do as you wish child you still cannot escape you're fate ! this is you're freedom” Replied Galamouth using Misa voice walking between us and looking at the research ,medical center made for him, he walked over to a huge super computer that was of an size of three huge closets, the computer was in the shape of a huge crystal, which was connected to

the floor ,it was this computer that controlled the whole room,beeing in the near of the tubes in the middle of them connected creating a organic structure. Galamouth who still controlled Misa touched the small silver pipes and cables that discreetly connected the tubes to each other and the crystal like super computer ,pettin them and looking at us „only the best achievments of science can benefit my ambition, look at the combination magic and science created its something that was un-imaginable back in Poland” Galamouth replied kissin the silver pipes, making me schocked wondering how he knew about Poland that was a bit un-expected „How do you know about Poland ? Are you Polish” I asked looking at Misa that was controlled by Galamouth,she smiled „Yes were breathen my friend we come from the same people ,I was adopted by you're kind and given shelter in Poland but at that time Poland was no more, it was the time of particions aproximetly 200 years before you were born, you're world and mine world might have been different but we share the knowlede ,the knowlede of truth only one that read Polish Literature and is of Polish origin can gather,even among our brethen were two of a kind destined to take hold and shape the future, only by realizin the world of ancients by using the thought way devised by the Poles one can truely comprehend the world, but once you know the truth its no suprise you feel dissapointed and devoted all you're existence to raping girls,but why waste it ,if you're lost Blaze you should have joined me and my ambition I shall tryumph over God and make him my toy, a fiting fate for something as sick and retarded” Explained Galamouth as I observed him not saying anything,preffering to let him speak first as this enabled me to know more about what was going on here. „you make God a toy ? now thats a retarded plan ,tell me is you're ambition to humiliate God ?is that what you're trying to do ? Well you only succeded at humiliatng yourself, nothing happens without the consent of God ,you got this far by the simple fact he or more exactly it allowed you , its you who are a toy in God's hands you're darkness sorrow and ambitions are all beeing used draining themselves untill they dissapear” I explained slowly looking at him as he looked at me a bit sorrowly, his sorrow was visible even in Misa eyes „you're still a fool ,you think this beeing is almighty observe how I shall make it tremble, its only thanks to my deceptions that I got this far, God is a fool he will notice it when I allow it, IM SUPERIOR TO GOD!!” screamed Galamouth ending his speech „ you're superior to God in nothing! were its creations its impossible, you shouldn't even desire that power its too much!! be fine with what you have and you will be given more with time !!” I yelled to Galamouth trying to make the mad Lord understand knowing that atleast for now I will be mocked. „Always a survent never a master !this is a key difference , I shan't surve no one, nothing !!!all shall surve my will and be under my domain this is my fate that will be written into existence by my self,unike you Blaze I shall use my full potential !!!” Replied Galamouth trying to proclaim his mad ambitions once again, as we both looked at Misa wondering how long this circus will last and when will Galamouth leave her body ,to concentrate on his mad plans.Dawn yawned and stared at us. „It looks like little Dawn isn't to interested in you're rant” I replied to Galamouth makin him smile and laught „did you ohnestly think she would understand our discusion?” He asked laughing and looked at the crystal computer walking towards it,touchin and embracing it glass structure „This is true perfection !!” Galamouth embraced the computer using Misa's tiny body.Dawn approached Galmouth who was possing Misa body, as she touches the computer too. "Whats this trash, weird whatever lord thats in Misa body." she said while glaring. „ah my child how to explain true perfection using words fit to you're tiny mind” He answered and looking at the glass

structure, making red energy currents push themselves into the glass painting symbols of a cup, two human symbols one lying in something appearing to be a mud and the other standing above him, the two were one and the same. This was supposed to describe Galamouth's triumph but could also tell about his demise as well the crystal howled in a glass sound as it changed colors in the entire room, changing the temperature as it started to get hot a bit. Galamouth using Misa's body turned her head to me „I thought I could warm this place up” smirking and smiling as he imputed commands into the crystal „be careful Dawn he's up to something possibly” I warned Dawn and carefully observed the environment. She used her fist, as she swung it forward trying to smash the computer, making Galamouth laugh „that's not enough to break it, brute force won't achieve anything, I had it constructed from the most sturdiest crystal ever found, Aluminium the mineral from the planet Catiopeia in the northern galaxy of Seienne near the Asturian star border under the Comeian Empire in the Naka taka hemisphere.” Said Galamouth smirking at Dawn. “I don't give a damn.” She replied as she placed her hand on the surface of the computer. As her hand slowly sank in, “Maybe I can pull something inside.” she said. Galamouth looked at her smirking „as you try that you'll be slowly pushed inside and probably consumed by the computer” he laughed a bit making me come closer „Dawn everything all right ?” I asked looking concerned „my my what an chevalier” Teased Galamouth enjoying his superiority. She pushed her hand deeper inside the computer, and looked at me “I am perfectly alright and it's kinda fun.” she said bluntly. „well really ?” I asked a bit worried „you need not to worry about your little friend you see her hand is merely analyzed to collect further DNA samples that will be used by me ,she was generous to submit her hand into the analysis herself, this only proves it Blaze ! that's her destiny she is like the others merely kept alive to further my knowledge about things” Said Galamouth boasting „about what things ?” I asked surprised. „about us and the universe all things small and big in this world everything we seek is inside us, we only need tools to open the locked truth” Galamouth answered my question. “What makes you think that you made me, ah there's something inside.” she said while drawing out her hands. As she drew out a uneven gem, while glazing at it. „that's amazing Dawn you retrieved it so swiftly now give it to me the Un-relia gem is a necessary component for the aurelia spell I'm working on” Galamouth explained walking towards Dawn „You see it can only be created from the blood of special race of ancient demons ,their DNA was hard to obtain and from that DNA Dawn was created , my greatest treasure” Exalted Galamouth madly laughing as he tried to persuade Dawn to hand over the gem to him. Dawn smiled, holding the gem up as she crushes it into pieces and it slowly vanished into fine ashes that was blown away. “Dream on something Lord.” she said still smiling. Galamouth walked away growling and yelling „What have you done !!! I told you to hand it over !!” He yelled as a huge lightning hit Dawn burning her badly as I looked at it shocked and quickly jumped to heal her. He walked over to the tubes looking at his subjects „oh Dawn don't you understand how badly I need the Un-relia stone to finish the next step of my grand desire, try to do a better job a true stone couldn't be crushed like that ,and if you can't do a proper un-relia stone than you're useless and all useless things must perish, do you understand bring me a proper stone !!” Yelled Galamouth „she's not doing anything !” I yelled towards Galamouth „you stay out of it Blaze ! there will be time to deal with you later when entertainment will be in order” Galamouth replied. She saw the lightning appear as she held her hand up to block it. Which has burned really badly, she licks it as it starts to heal up quickly. “I am alright

Blaze, this is fun~ What a weak lightning something Lord." she chuckled. "Besides, who says that's not the real stone. It could be you know~" she said more seriously. Galamouth growled a bit and smirked „yes I have no doubt it was the stone but its composition was weak ,well you are a weak useless child just like that lightning I used you're aren't capable in making it, what a pathetic being" he growled and looked at his subject trying to get Dawn mad a bit. "Really? That's sad to hear so, but then again could you leave my friends body. It really looks weird when she talks in such a weird voice." she said while taking out a sweet. He glomped at her and walked over „why don't we make a deal you give me a proper gem and I'll leave her alone ?" Galamouth replied staring into her eyes. „all you need to do is to put your hand in that computer concentrate create a perfect gem and hand it over to me and I shall disappear from Misa's body" Galamouth added trying to force her to give him what he wanted. "How about try making it yourself then, the so called Great Lordddd." she grinned. „Dawn he said that already only your blood can create it" I replied looking at them. "want me to kill Misa ? Because there's a probability I could recreate it by sacrificing this body and its owner" Galamouth chuckled replying to Dawn. „damn if that was an option I could simply get rid of him, but he has to use someone else's body" I replied annoyed. „compared to my true powers you wouldn't even stand a chance Blaze, oh don't worry we will get to that part soon enough" Galamouth answered. "Tch, your weak " she said, while touching the computer once again as her hand sinks in. „what do you mean weak?" I asked her looking at the tubes and the room. She used her free hand and points to the Lord. "That weak something lord" she said and drew out her hand from the computer holding on to a brightly coloured gem.

„Wonderful Dawn now give it to me !!" Galamouth yelled in ecstasy „but first test it try to break it let us see if that's truly it" Commanded Galamouth „if she breaks it then what's the point of her making it in the first place" I asked Galamouth. „the true Un-reliable stone is one of the hardest substances ever made it won't be destroyed" Galamouth replied. She sighed as she held on tightly to the gem, but it still doesn't break. "Here stupid something Lord." She mumbles and tossed the gem to the Lord. Galamouth caught the gem „wonderful !! White Master come to me !!" Galamouth screamed, the room became incredibly bright and the old man dressed in white with a huge beard touching the blue floor walked over to Misa possessed by Galamouth as she gave the gem to White Master „Wonderfully done my master" White Master compliment „Go prepare the stage for ,my development !" Galamouth replied as White Master slowly disappeared „I'm grateful for your assistance we shall continue this another time I shall be expecting you Blaze come and find me!!" He spoke to us as a dark redish aura left Misa's body like steam , making Misa faint again as I caught her while the room, became darker a bit. Signifying Galamouth's departure we were alone „well well I didn't expect to meet with the guy so soon" I said looking at Dawn. "That dude Lord is stupid" Dawn said and laughs. „Maybe or maybe not, I would call that insanity not stupidity, but he's the one that made you and yet you defy him ,I wonder why" I walked up to Dawn looking around. "Marks can be made up, just so you know." Dawn reply while yawning. „well seriously ? Than who are you ? How did you get here ?" I asked looking at her thinking the girl distorted her view of reality a bit which wasn't bad to me. "I could be someone, someone that wasn't supposed to be here, and I am not mental." she replied. I watched her and smiled „so you're telling me you're a spy ? ok whom do you work for?" I teasingly started to interrogate her. "For no one?" she said while glaring. „ok and how you got here ?" I asked smiling. Wondering what the girls

response would be, entertained or atleast amused by her behavior. „Still she could have told me the truth. If thats the case” I thought” than what's exactly going on”I continued to wonder. The pressure was monitored by special computer systems located all over the giant lab, rays of multicolored lights were used as inputers of commands instead of traditonal touch screams or keyboards, making the whole programing faster as the whole procedure was already preset and replayed all over again, an simple way to avoid programing and monitoring the same values,that never changed. The whole structure was a part of this divine program,a massive combination of different functions that were to distort reality and fulfill Galamouth's ambition. But why did his mad spell require a structure that resembled a huge sky scraper, why did he install this all into a space that was suppose to surve the sphere of commerce ? Perhaps because of the main reason they were created for,the essence of this was felt everywhere. The other reason could be more pragmatic , the sky scraper was abandoned which meant there was no jurisdiction, no one to interfere with his activities , in fact the Systems whores preffered to keep away from the places, people and demons they ruined.It was because of this essence ,this greed which allowed Galamouth's darkness to spread from this place so easilly. This darkness created by the system which engulphed Galamouth in eternal sorrow and pain, was caused by ignorance and stupidity. Wise could and can clearly see throught deceptions created by these ugly pig like whores. For the wise don't pretend to cover the truth in the name of politness or morality but instead are open to criticize decay in every form. Not caring whether its happening above or below open to cherish beauty not caring whether it comes from above or below, only system whores thought target above discarding these that are below,which actually serves our purpose as it atleast allows us to be free and enjoy some limited happiness, instead of being subjugated into the so called 'rat race'. Even agony and mortal sickness is more pleasent below than above, because beeing free we atleast have the right to choose what we do untill our time is up.Thats why Outcasts don't fear bad fate and chains system whores use to opress them, they are already used to this danger and treat it as a part of theirre lifes,while the system whores put in the same conditons would plunge into despair. This was true especially with Galamouth's children, they didn't fear Galamouth cause they got used to him, the dangers he created and his mad ambitions. For the children it was normal,he was normal and propably even kind because of this incredible streanght. Galamouth wasn't weak and therefore had no reason to fear ,the little children or other beeings that inhabited or choosed to inhabit this place, using theirre abilities in the same manner a good farmer uses animals to get food.This Sky scraper was Galamouth's farm,where Children and other beeings like animals were used to provide For Galamouth's mad ambitions and all his needs, this structure surved only this purpose. With all its precise technology that implemented into its walls, witnessed by me and Dawn while waking throught the laboratory, cloefully observing the room, a futuritic cabin with different chemicals in small bottless was located near the hall way on the other side, as we neared to the other exit. Having come from the other side throught the entire room, we noticed silver stairs, with shiny green edges leading upwards. The futuristic cabin was a combination of an classical cabin design and silver computer unit. In fact the cabin was a very huge and massive computer unit, that stored different potions, and chemical substances. Which could be obtained only with permission. All arranged in ideal order by silver blue classical design robotic hands, and protected with a strong transparent glass like structure, which even demons couldn't break.Egiptian like symbols appears on the glass making it



also have a displayer function, greeting us and awaiting a certain combination that would allow us access to these substances. The code which we of course didn't know. These substances were used for Galamouth's mad ambitions, the violet, blue and rainbow colored substances were either, drugs or magical combinations necessary for certain events to transpire. Artificial food, and blood substances included. A variety of mixtures only Galamouth and designated servants knew of, and knew how to use them. The Golden shelves didn't contain only liquid potions, we could also notice solid substances and materials, like artificial or natural skin that was grown in special boxes, that were themselves special computer units that controlled pressure and growth of the microorganism and cells inside the skin, other rectangular bottles contain brown fats used in cooking and chemistry. Green tea leaves, some grains I couldn't identify. Acids, deadly poisons. Dead animals in bottles kept for the purpose of analysing them through dissection, or perhaps even for the purpose of reviving them. The shelves glowed in brightly yellow light. We heard someone coming down the stairs and suddenly a girl entered the room walking down the silver stairs. The girl stopped walking noticing me with Dawn. She had blonde hair and blue eyes. Her eyes hypnotised me quickly. Making Dawn grin "long time no see Arua, you look so beautiful". She smiled. Making Arua slowly and confidently walk over to Dawn's side replying "well you are so kind, Dawn". She looked at me trapped in her eye magic not being able to do anything making her smile naughtily and releasing me "hello mister, who are you? It's the first time I see you around. Are you her boyfriend?" she continued smiling naughtily. Making me look at her a bit bewildered not knowing with whom or what we were dealing "no, I'm not." I replied a bit casually looking at the strange girl knowing, that whatever is happening will reveal itself soon. "oh, ok then let me introduce myself. My name is Arua. Nice to meet you, Blaze Master" Arua grinned, making me surprised, "why, why did you know my name?". Dawn laughed, "silly Blaze, you had been hypnotised by Arua's eyes. That's how she can look everything from your soul. Oh Arua, you are forgetting telling him that you are spirit holder." "well, he knew it a second ago" I looked at her with interest, "ah so you're a spirit holder eh? tell me Dawn why ain't I surprised, Galamouth gathers all sorts for his mad ambitions" I merely sighted bowing in respect to Arua, "ah maybe you could help us with Misa, Galamouth putted some sort of spell on her and we can't wake her up" I explained showing Misa to Arua hoping she could find a way to wake up our sleeping princess. Arua looked very angry. "what did he want from Misa? Or maybe with you Dawn". Arua looked at me with a glance that made me tremble, she was controlling the situation now "can you explain to me?". I just nervously laughed, "you are spirit holder aren't you, why can't you peak in my soul again?". Arua came closer to Misa, kneeling down and touching her chest "well, you lied to me, Blaze! You try to escape from my reach. But, you are so silly, you already trapped with my eyes" she explained while touching Misa. Gently waving her hands and soon, Misa began to wake up. "hello, Misa. How is your day? Feeling bad after Galamouth controlled your body, heh?" Arua asked and answered her question as Misa still felt dizzy and incredibly weak, she was just able to give a faint smile to Arua. "well, I think you're ok" Dawn and me neared closer looking at our new comer while me observed the room as well "she is not feeling good. Just let her have some rest" Arua advised Dawn. "rest isn't something we can afford" I looked at her closely, "you know that weird encounters aren't uncommon here right? I've been here for a while" I sighted breathing a bit, "so do you mind me asking? Who are you and what is your purpose here?" I looked seriously at Arua knowing she would give me answers, to some questions. "I had

told you, that I'm Arua. And the purpose I'm here? I dunno. I just want to come here. " Arua answered. "I just sensed Galamouth here. So I just coming" Making me look at her, under the impression that she didn't know much "but you are a spirit holder. Can't you trap his soul". I teased her making Arua laughing" no. I can't. He always escape from my hypnotis. When I tried to, he already controlled me" Arua answered my question looking sadly at me and a bit worried. I knew the girl was up to something but she didn't appear to be dangerous. This situation as dangerous thought, Galamouth needed to be stopped. But on the other hand I understood his actions were futile, was there anything hate could accomplish, life in this realm is more of a game you get stats, new levels. fight evil vilians that always have a twisted plan. nothing out of ordinary a simple booring reality seen from my perspective. should I be affraid now? Why? this was exactly what I wanted. I lived my dream, seriously I should be happy but was I? learn that life dosen't need adventures and spectacular events to be happy, yet I don't mind them once a while, but instead should be simple easy and pleasant. Sometimes its best to stay exactly where you are. Sometimes there's no need to be arrogant and instead requires patience and a more humble approach. If we deserve the reward it will come to us, so of course I resolved my self to following my own path, taking only what I can. Adopting this I suddenly found my self grasping things that I didn't knew were possible to grasp. Instead of chasing I merelly followed my actions resulted in the things that would normaly get away from my reach, coming to me of theire own accord. Following a path of a nobody I became everything I wanted as a result of having these things come to me as a result of others actions. Not necessary directed at my benefit or well being but instead simply resulting in my well beeing as a result of others actions. Suddenly a red wolf appeared coming from the wall. He came to Arua. Making Arua look so worried "sorry. I must go now. Next time we meet, i'll give u some information about Galamouth" Arua quickly said and was gone with the red wolf, dissapearing in mid air, making me wonder why she was so affraid „well she's an odd one isn't she?" I asked Dawn. Dawn shrugged and said, "I am bored." Making me looked at her weirdly „huh after all that happened you're boored?" I asked my friend „Seriously look around yourself for once" I added. "Just a lady appear and dissappear with a wolf, nothing much." she reply back. „ah really well it appears that lady is you're friend, oh never mind it would be ntural for you to assume all of it is normal, I guess it depends on the point of view what excites me might be booring for you" I replied thinking about it. „it makes one think about what excitement really is, is it just a emotion we feel? often new things appear exciting at first but when appearing to many times they get booring, why can't we alway be positive and excited. To just be content with what we have? Why do we get boored with these things that are in our possession? what is it that pushes us to want more and have dreams? Is it Arrogance?" I asked a serious question not hoping for an answer but curious of what Dawn would say. She glanced at me and look at the walls. "Differ to many." She said „Well atleast there's no banking whores" I replied sighting remembering an unpleasant event. "Banking whores?" she ask. I looked at her smiling „lucky you who have never meet the system whores that rule over people money, these monsters decide about human fate are worsen than Galamouth and his mad scheme, well if Galamouth plan would mean killing them all than Im on his side, who knows how much its all worth I hope he slaughters them all and make them tremble in fear" I replied looking at the stairs and took Misa's hand helping her to stand up and we slowly moved forward. Dawn just simply nodded her head and follow behind me, smiling and obviously thinking of something, we walked on the silver

stairs looking at the purple walls that appeared to be made of some marble like substance the purple was shining like in these classic anime series I used to watch. She yawned while grabbing some sweets from her pocket and quickly pops some into her mouth. While I was watching Misa and wondering whether she felt all right, the walls made a peculiar sound that made me interested. Dawn tilted her head glazing around the enclosure surrounding. This sound could be described as a mixture of metallic sound waves, like from whales that called to one another. The stairway felt alive which made the experience a bit weird, giving out a chilling atmosphere. Stairs shined in different colors obviously being computer units that communicated with each other using color frequencies and light as the conductor, containing a sensor, transmitter and inputter in its atoms a feat of molecular engineering that was hard to describe. Nanotechnology made it easy to create and combined with dark crafts this structure became an instrument of Galamouth's ambitions connected to him at all time through all senses, we were inside Galamouth's very structure and all represented his mind and hearth. Literally everything constructed here was a mirror of his soul and could become a gateway to his mind, but also everything was made to protect its creator and could be used to harm us, an ideal secluded world that turned around its creator. That's why Galamouth had no need for guards or escape, everyone attacking him would find themselves lured into a deadly trap because here Galamouth was the only one that could decide. My earlier emotions were no coincidence, my rape was well planned and executed, both me and Dawn could lose ourselves in it and that was its real power, making it the most deadliest weapon ever constructed. In wars often the main objective is to confuse your enemy, this structure however allowed Galamouth to control and decide our next steps, it was up to him to decide where and when we die, leave or meet him and only few could oppose this like the girl that was in the other place walking over the edge of a ravine with this red wolf. Someone came out quickly from the shadows behind Arua. "It is you? Dietrich?". The dark shadows formed into a more human appearance of a boy with golden hair wickedly smiling "well, long time no see." Dietrich replied smirking in a very menacing manner as they both stood in another dimension created in this skyscraper, making Arua glare at him "what do you want from me?" she replied a bit worried, while Dietrich laughed in a creepy manner "Galamouth calling you. Our lord wants you to come back, for something. Maybe he knows that you had just met Blaze before you were supposed to meet him." The boy replied in an intimidating manner, Dietrich obviously enjoyed his menacing superiority over the young and inexperienced Arua making the red wolf step in the fit of rage obviously trying to protect Arua from such rude behaviour. "oh,, just shut your mouth stupid wolf!" Dietrich screamed a bit worried the wolf didn't back down away from him.. Arua petted red wolf's head. Smiling at Dietrich fear feeling a bit better with her companion at her side "good. You better bite Dietrich !!" Arua advised her red wolf. and continued to explain her situation to Dietrich that looked at her angrily "well I sensed Galamouth there. So I came, but I don't know that Blaze is there. I'll see Galamouth later. Just give me a minute". she answered making Dietrich turn back to his shadow form, "yeah, whatever" he exorted and shortly after ran away from the red wolf. Arua stayed and breathed out calmly sighting smiling to her red wolf, "hey, red wolf,, who can I believe Blaze's soul is so kind. But Galamouth the one who raised me." she asked the question looking sadly. „Dietrich wants a bloody fight more than both Galamouth and Blaze, but Blaze isn't the one that murdered Aya!! Galamouth lied to you when he told you that " The wolf spoken into Arua's mind. While the girl saddened gently petted the wolf, looking into the

distance as the wolf licked her hand „Blaze Master is a kind person tell him what happened to you, maybe he can save you!" The wolf replied and looked at Arua's face."why dont we check it out?"Arua smiled naughty. "what do you try,Arua? dont try to betray Galamouth now!!" the red wolf continued to talk in Arua mind visibly concerned over her actions as she smirked replying telepathically "well,I would like to. let's make some noise. " Arua commanded and stood up walking with the red wolf. she found me in the outside coming out from the shadows appearing above. Misa and Dawn busy with themselves didnt pay much attention to what was going to happen in this stairway corridor"it would be very simple,heh?" Arua smiled as the walls shined brihtly yellow and the stairs metamorphed into another dimension shocking me and my comrades as we found ourselves standing in a forest full of huge tall strong trees, the skies were dark full of shines and above three red planets acting as these worlds moons forming a triangle I looked around and noticed Arua behind us standing on the light brown ground."what are you up to now ?" I asked turning my self to Arua. "Im not one but two".She answered standing not answering my question and making me schocked because it looked like this girl and her red wolf would become my next opponents "then,because you already figure me out, I'll make some noise with you"Arua replied making me even moore confused. "what?"I looked at her totally confused „so you really plan to face us don't ya" I quickly added trying to grasp the situation "fire storm!!"Arua screamed as the red wolf rushed raging because he was called in battle to active the power of a spirit „we must called the full name of the spirit"..... "Blaze,let's have a battle. show me your power" Arua grinned while the red wolf came closer to me "the ring!" Arua screamed and thrown a ring and the red wolf raging again thrown out redish flames encircling the area trapping me "let's begin" Arua smirked standing confidently as I quickly appeared behind her and stabbed her with my hands in the back thinking that I killed her ripping out her hearth as Aruas body fallen lifelessly into the ground making me squish the hearth in my bloody hands watching her die „ way ahead of you dear, what a pity you could have just stayed alive" I sighted trying to walk away looking at the flames and realising I can't get out ,I turned my attention at the wolf „it seems I must kill her pet too, wish the dark lord made it worth while" I sighted again thinking I won.The red wolf walked over to me growling as it slowly metamorphed into a red haired and red eyes man. "she already told you that her not one but two"He replied smirking with an annoying superiority as Arua's body became dust. "what?" I replied looking surprised. " are you thinking that u won?" The red haired wolfman replied as I could hear Arua somewhere behind me there was Arua sound, she was standing all right as if nothing happened while I rushed back trying to hit her making her laught as she evaporated „damn !" I yelled and rushed to attack the red haired wolfman but he easilly and swiftly avoided my speed punches going back few steps making me fall on my face, and very angry as I had to get up.Arua merelly mocked me as I looked at them both angry whiping the dust from my cloths looking at her who felt so superior"blaze,u don't get it heh??u already trapped with our illusion combination" She then replied continuing to mock me as I looked at her suprired "illusion ? is that al you can do what a cowardly technique" I replied but she was merelly smiling mockingly "no!!I'm not! Its my battle style with fire storm. But you are so silly...my illusion still level why cant you escape from the flame ring?are you weak?"..I walked over smiling as my red eyes glown „ weak ? very well Ill show you my true power distortion !! " I screamed as black cracks appeared on the ring making her illusion fade away slowly dissintegrating into air as I looked smiling „what now?" I asked hoping the

serious battle would begun now, making Arua laught mockingly again as I realised that this wouldn't be over easily „you are wrong” she replied looking at me with a bit serious expression, while around us the the ring particle become ring again. "let's continue with level 2" she replied as I looked at her annoyed „ so are you lanning do something actually ? and what about you're promise about giving me information on Galamouth ?” I asked looking at her and prepairing myself to battle."i'll give the information. But u must give me some information" She finally replied suprising me a bit as we looked at each other standing in a standstill „ so you're re ready to talk eh” I replied smirking and looked around as the flame ring broke into tiny orange pieces making an interesting short spectacle while the tiny powder morphed and became a rope that suddenly tied me up , making me scream from anguish "give me the thruth then i'll let you go!u cant lie to me. That rope will tell me everything. Then let's see some vision with me" She replied as suddenly everything became dark and we found ourselves in a very ancient surrounding, dark grey walls with huge winows and a green or yellow light created by dyffussed sun light, these were castle walls and we suddenly found ourselves inside an ancient castle, standing on the green marble floor inside the Baravan castle , near the walls two girls dressed in a blue and violet attires ,one part dresses made from a delicate silk like material. One of the girls was definetly Arua but I was suprised to find out that she had a twin. "did you know her?" she finally asked me as I looked around noticing some old paintings but not beeing abe to both enjo them and collect information as the girl quickly interrupted me in this by her tighting orange flame rope. "No I never meet her its my first time here" I replied looking into her eyes wondering what exactly this was all about "who is she?" I replied a bit schocked .Making her smile a bit warmly as she knew I was ohnest,the rope compelled me to tell only the truth "who do you think is she?". she asked flirting with me a bit as I looked at the painting and noticed something interesting on it but turned my attention to her once she pulled the rope forcing an answer on me „its your sister?". I asked hesitantly wondering why she asked me about her thought I never saw her before , she intrigued me along with this surrounding which I was trying to decypher and understand both its meaning and were it was located, I knew this vision won't last long so I tried to memorize everything I could see like the old brown chair placed near the wall and the two girls playing in one corner near some entrance. even the fact both were walking without shoes was mportant to me as Arua replied to me "yes. Did you know her? Had you met her?". She asked as I felt more pain beeing squished by the rope ,trying to figure out how to get free I sended some lightings at her throught the rope but she made them go back at me. " Its the first time I saw her!!" I replied not enjoying this situation wondering why my powers didn't work on the rope, up to this moment I thought I had an advantage in this battle not suspecting she could change her illussions into something more usefull while Arua herself looked at the rope. The rope was no different. "then,did you killing her at the battle?" she asked as I looked at her suprised „No I haven't .... you're turn tell me about this place , and let me go ! how on earth did you create something as that powerfull with you're skills ?” I asked wondering could I use my power to rip the rope apart, this was truely a desperate situation."u cannot escape,blaze. Not now. Later,i promise. About my skill because I given a power from Galamouth long ago,and also because my training in battle. Its a power of soul. People who have a powerfull soul can make a brilliant illusion. But people that use so much illusion have a fragile body. I dont know when my time last. About this place,its was my home. I born here. Grow up here and raised by Galamouth here" She explained

as I looked at her interested in what will she do no „ what do you plan to do with me than ? tell me what did Galamouth plan to do in this castle ? and one more thing that golden haired lady who is she ?" I asked suprised , mesmerized a bit by a beautiful woman painted on the painting she had golden hair, and golden eyes ,wearing a beautiful baroque silver green dress,her figure was shown just to her breast that were covered by the dress,she hold a cup with skull engraved on it , the green cup contained either wine or blood. The woman looked sad her skin looked a bit pale and the background of the painting was purple. The painting was decorated with golden frames , and it appeared old and a bit dusty as if forgotten."I just want to talk to you. " she explained looking straight into my eyes , making me smile"well really aren't you the naughty one" I replied smirking wondering what will this strange girl do now. "I must attack you to make u safe from Dietrich. Galamouth plan is...to use the power of soul people to create something,and I am afraid of Dietrich" She explained. „Galamouth plans to end all of existence by erasing God , but that's impossible since everything is connected to it. Well why can't you let me go ?" I asked looking into girl's eyes as she looked sadly „so where is she , your sister ?" I asked a bit as the girl appeared very sad. While suddenly Dawn popped out with chips out of nowhere and started munching on them, while offering some to Misa. they were both trying to ignore the situation in front of them obviously .”hey you two what took you ? can you help me get free from her !! ?" I asked yelling at Dawn and Misa hoping they would do something to free me.Dawn merely yawned and walked towards Arua offering her chips. "Here, the chips are more worthwhile than Blaze." Dawn said and smiled mockingly as I looked at her angrily „you traitor !" I yelled but was squished by the rope by Arua as she laughed smiling "well,no one can let you free expect me." She explained walking over to Dawn and Misa "can I have some more ?" She asked Dawn politely smiling making me feel a bit ignored „and what about me ? when will I get some !" I yelled angrily.Then suddenly Dawn used her whole energy gathering a pink redish aura and bombed up the whole illusion distorting it as we returned to the staircase. „were back" I looked suprised noticing the silver pink walls and the red energy currents going upwards like water in creeks „look below your feet, this energy what is it ? it goes upward ?" I asked suprised noticing that I'm still tied up by the orange flame rope „what the hell why am I still tied up" I asked slowly annoyed.This only made Arua laugh she looked at Dawn and Misa standing three steps below us and replied walking one step down "well,it can break up even though it was bombed. " She looked at Dawn a little bit angry as she continued "ow my,can you not bomb my castle? I'm lucky because it's just illusion" she replied yet again as I looked at the silver green stairs and the red energy currents that were going upward, it seemed the structure was sucking it from somewhere. A swarm of red bats flew through the corridor and between us , these bats were similar in construction to the shadow birds Galamouth used, and might as well been his summoners. They were carrying white spheres that were full of golden light. Seeing them Arua walked back few steps upwards screaming in panic and in the state of shock didn't remember where she was" oh my God!!! No!! Go away!!!" she yelled terribly frightened with tears falling from her cheeks, she forgot about the need to focus her weapon and the flamerope disintegrated , untying me as I quickly rushed upstairs trying to run away and follow the bats "thanks God!!and also thanks bats!!"I replied jumping through shocked Arua in my demonic speed , by passing her and leaving both Dawn and Misa behind. I quickly jumped into another floor and into a floor that looked like some kinda huge tea salon place. Running in my demonic speed following the red bats and

the mysterious item they were carrying i didn't notice all of the surrounding. Thought I could notice that this place defiled logic and common sense, dolls and old fashion toys lying everywhere in this huge open space I was stopped by some explosions that gathered in a 10 series attack encircled me creating gray dust. I stopped looking around and wondering why this place appeared schizophrenic a bit, without any logical structure. The floors were golden this time without any magical symbols. Toys lying everywhere, beeing of every size. I watched how a mechanical old fashion soldier walked slowly towards his destination, out of nowhere an orange ball appeared and hit me exploding into my face. From somewhere of this strange room a crazy laughter was heard. The room was heated and white steam filled the room, making the vision a bit blurry this was a trick to make me confused as I soon forgotten from which way I came and tried walking towards the laughter. Beeing able to look at it closer I could realize that this room was huge. Taking an entire full floor in this complex. Now that my vision was blurred I could only see whats directly in front of me, making me think about the importance of seeing things and vision. Most humans rely on vision treating it as a key sensor, forgetting they can use other senses to engulf into reality. In this enviroment every breaze or a change in temperature had its meaning. But a simple minded human that relies on eyes to see wouldn't notice this. Also blind people use other senses to try to adapt to this ever changing reality. The pressure changed constantly in this structure, and mechanical soldiers and toys, were scatered everywhere confusing me even more as the girls laughter was heard coming from all over the place. Above me far above I could see victorian like huge golden chandeliers. Suddenly I noticed a little girl jumping on them. Not knowing from where exactly she came from. . She had blonde hair and blue eyes similar to Arua. She looked like a fragile doll which made me feel odd as I remembered Arua and her strong posture, in fact I wondered how did she get past me so fast. She appeared more young than Arua, making me realize this was her sister as I yawned a bit annoyed looking at her while she looked at me "you are blaze right? what are you doing to my sister? Galamouth tell me that you do something to my sister!! I'll kill you with my hammer!!" she started calmly but than yelled ending her speech and looked at me with very fiery eyes, jumping down from this huge distance she quickly took out a small mallet which suddenly started to grow bigger. It looked like a yellow toy mallet but had incredible power as she hit the floor while I avoided swiftly beeing hit by jumpin aside. The mallet create cracks and a hole in the floor as the girl landed safely on the floor and rushed to me quickly trying to hit me, making me run away from her „great this is all I needed !!” I screamed annoyed trying to escape from this crazy little girl. In all this excitement there was a loud bang noise and a cry making me stop and look behind it was her she slipped while running and cried. of course she screamed because she hit the floor loudly making me take a breather and sight looking at her lying on the floor, smirking and laughing "ouch!!" she started whining which made it amusing too look and I seriously enjoyed my self a bit, however after a while I started to feel for her after all she only wanted to help her sister there wasn't nothing else I could do so I decided to walk over her side, kneel and help her, after all her sister wouldn't come here so fast beeing terrified by the bats Galamouth summonsed for something she wasn't able to hear this cry, also I thought it could cause problems later if I left this girl in her state "sister!! its hurt!! Help me!!" The little girl continued to whine about her noose, it was bleeding so I putted my hand in my bag and took out few hankerchefs, gently whiping off the blood „you better not move” I hugged her gently, a bit suprising her to make her calm down and than slowly continued to

clean her noose, luckily it wasn't broken, just a bit damaged I only touched it with my hand and healed as green energy flown into her. Then when her noose was cleaned I sat with her and looked into her blue eyes. The girl was doing the same sitting quietly. Smiling to me, very gently and warmly she appeared less demonic or even human, but like a doll this girl appeared like a fragile doll that could be broken anytime maybe it was this fragility, that constituted the reason for her violent behavior, apparently she did not know how to control her self. Now she calmed down and was laughing happily making me have mixed feelings about her. She definitely didn't plan on harming me anymore, and we even started to play together. Back on the staircase Arua who woke up from the shock thanks to Dawn and Misa sensed Galamouth's appearance, and could also sense her sister pain from that accident as only now the girl's desperate plea reached her, with eyes opened and in state of fear she swiftly rushed up stairs followed by both Dawn and Misa. Matching my speed they found us quickly, happily smiling at each other and playing much to Arua's shock and surprise. Both Dawn and Misa were behind her as Arua walked to us rather fastly making me stand up with the white handkerchief stained in the little girl's blood "What are you doing Aya?? And why u with Blaze?" Arua finally asked the question surprised looking at the handkerchief in my hand with Aya's blood on it, Arua who was very protective of her little sister sister shouted to me angry "what r u doing???" looking at me with fierce eyes, while Aya happily laughed enjoying herself again surprising her sister with her question "what are you afraid of,,sis??" Aya smiling asked her question looking straightly into Arua's eyes, as she hugged Aya warmly asking her question "what happen to you??" very gently cuddling into her face as Aya replied with carelessness "dunno,,hehehe" grinning a bit trying to appear very dangerous but in fact was more funny, now that she didn't have her mallet to hit me with I burned the blood stained handkerchief in my hands using my power, it burned in light green flames and turned my back to them walking away leaving both Dawn and Misa together with arguing sisters. "don't grin!! It would make you look stupid!!" Arua replied yelling at Aya, making her reply "oh yeah?? I don't think so" Argued Aya who thought her grin made her very scary. I slowly managed to walk a small distance from them. This commotion made me wonder about families, and ties and also about different bonds that are created by family, I remembered that I too had a family. Long ago in the past I almost completely forgotten I also had a family that was composed from a mother, father, my self and my brother, and although I no longer can recall how this forgotten life looked like, it too had too have some happy and sad moments. It's an interesting question which we can ponder now. What is a family? According to all the encyclopedia's, the family is the smallest societary unit, its the family's role to adapt the younger generation into the world, and according to definition to ensure moral, ethical development. Which in our casual translation means that family represents the smallest unit of the system, and extends its hold into personal life of every subject. However it's not what family really should be, the real meaning of family is different it means people that are bounded to each other and live their everyday with each other. Sharing both love and experience. However this too does not represent the whole image of family, according to God's understanding of this word we all are one family consisting of brothers and sisters and it is our parent, the one that gave us life. That's why in commemoration of this we too can become parents and create life, giving this role to our children when their time comes, and this too is family creating trees that are composed of whole generations, in this way both demons and humans bound, creating ties that tie entire generations, through billion of milenia's,



making each new family member a continuation of the tree. However if we treat these truths seriously were used by the system whores and lose ourselves and our families making them subject to the system's control. The oppressive regime created by greed the system, have effectively poisoned family members making them hate each other, resulting in hideous crimes being done in name of money. Can Gold become a God. My answer is never, gold doesn't even describe the full glory of God and its bright color, is only a mockery of the warmth we can feel when we grow up in the loving family, so my question to you my faithful readers is, is it worth to destroy your family for the sake of Gold ? When watching at their golden decorated room I knew and was fully aware that these beautiful toys Aya had would be worthless if Arua died. Only now that her sister was with her she was truly happy, of course her earlier actions and aggression towards me was dictated by the fact she only wanted to protect her loved one, this made me detest Galamouth and his ways for the first time, witnessing first hand how he toyed with emotions of these that lived under him. Galamouth of course considered himself to be a god, above these two, but maybe his ignorance stemmed from the fact that he himself didn't have a family. According to what I knew at the time Galamouth was always alone, perhaps he was an orphan. The tragedy of Galamouth might as well originate from simple desire to be loved and noticed, if so then he wasn't any different from my self. This meant that in some period of my existence I might as well have been the same as him, then what changed me and made me different in the end ? maybe the simple fact I never was truly alone, Galamouth might as well have rejected others love and that's how he became all alone. Just like Galamouth others that get under system's dominance forget the true meaning of a family, and that's how mothers suddenly kill their children. This is how these crimes that shocked us so badly originate. The system first destroys families by implanting sins into them, greed, pride, lust and jealousy can easily destroy a family. Once a family is destroyed the decay is exposed fuelling the hatred which becomes an ideal nourishment to this hideous regime of ignorance and greed. Helping others to succumb to this fate, this is how system established its dominance and control. Our role is to speak about it everywhere it's possible to make others aware, but whether they will listen it depends from them, and their families. Families should be created from love, even though we live in the world that is always ruled by the system, we need families that will spread truth and help us build our walls and our society. Freedom starts within the walls of a loving and caring family, oppression starts in the wall of an abusive family ruled by the greed by a 'family' of system whores. Depending on a family one might become a system whore or a free person. That's where it all starts that's why families are essential, that's why they need to be protected from the system's wrath. I continued walking looking at the massive room, both Arua and Aya lived in. The steam calmed down and it cooled a bit as I walked towards a golden fountain, which had beautiful flowers erected in it. Blue water was sprinkling out of it. I looked into it wondering was it a trap, as I was followed by the small group that could become my family under these circumstances. After all we would share something during this difficult trial that was now beginning. Lost in my thoughts I looked at the azure blue water, taken from an ocean. It looked very beautiful inside this golden fountain. Blue the color of innocence and Gold the color associated with greed, the fake warmth. System always consumed and destroyed these that are innocent driving them into madness, it happened to me once as well. It's easy to feel disgusted to this world, if I wouldn't hate it I wouldn't be walking this path. This path was taken out of revenge, that was the sad truth,

thats why I wasn't a hero someone else was the hero of this story, while I could be merely an anti-hero. Too little darkness to be truly evil, too little light to be a good person a hopeless situation. Worthless existence that dwells in twilight of things that was my existence. Thats how I was viewed by the world thats why I always walked in shadows. System consumes everyone and everything leaving nothing, thats why I hate it the most, cause I myself was eaten by the whores and forced into decay. This memory of everything I lost pushed me to seek my revenge and become who I am now. In this war the system whores should bleed, be destroyed and disappear. That was my wish, to destroy the greedy whores leaving only innocent alive, but was it possible? Would innocent become greedy whores if the real whores disappear, the universe always turns towards equality, seed of darkness always appear sooner or later, its inevitable. This situation was comparable to a certain knight from La Mancha, that was born to late to realize his dreams and therefore walked a path only a fool would take, I was no different just a fool. So why did I reside myself to this foolish destiny, that would be a question I ask myself over and over, but not finding an answer I could only work forward, my curse you might say was to always walk forward without any clear reason. Of course I could stop a while enjoy my self, even forget but it wouldn't last this short blessings always had to end, it appears they served only to keep me going on my hopeless path, I was the immortal Judge that was also a prisoner of his fate. I always wondered whether I really create it my self or was I programmed by God to think that I did, or maybe I was simply thinking too much on issues that are un-important? Both sorrows and happiness were embraced by me constantly but only for short moments of time, as love or hate aren't eternal. This war although constant always changed its leaders, whole generations that walked into the stage, only to disappear short moments later. But I choosed to be constant and therefore I watched and experienced it happening. My choice was my curse and yet thought I knew this, I also desired this fate to continue. Why such conflicting views in my self, from where did they originate. Embracing both darkness and light not willing to let anything go, I myself stranded my self in the twilight zone. Yes it gived me incredible power, yes it caused me incredibly weak. I was both incredibly weak and strong at the same time, my personal paradox, for my strenght came from my weakness, love from hate, courage from cowardice. Incredibly paradoxical situation. Thats why the one person I couldn't ever understand, was my self. I couldn't sympathize with my self but also wasn't able to detest my self, instead I pushed my self forward, angry at any obstacle that obstructed my path. My path was covered in darkness but dedicated to protect the light, thats why I always walked it, trying to never regret anything, but despite this I always regretted something anyways. Something was either out of my reach or false. Knowing this I detested my self a bit more. But than again I also loved the things I do. conflicted within my self always trying to make the impossible happen, I couldn't be satisfied with just defeating Galamouth, he needed to learn his lesson and to attain this victory I was willing to play this game more than required. Of course I knew there was no real risk involved, I was the only one that knew this for certain, which means that I wasn't risking at all, and yet I was affraid of the danger that this situation caused. Not knowing whether I succeseed or make my self a fool again. What if I fail? Than that means I allowed yet another tragedy to happen. Should I follow the will of others or my own, my orders were to stop Galamouth, but they weren't specific. The Gods allwed me to do what I can, obviously believing I was the right one, or perhaps they knew I would fail in this and send me away so I wont interfere with them? Was I really as that pathetic. The worst thing was that

I didn't know which sentence was the right one. I had no way of ever being sure. But I was certain there was no way to turn back, no I wouldn't escape. I didn't want to escape, escaping from this situation would be a waste, I never escaped from such situations. I was hoping this event would provide an answer to some questions I asked from the start, was I right to demand this power and to take this path? or was it out of my reach? Or maybe I needed to put some more effort into this or to find an alternative way? But was there any alternative way? or was my path the alternative way, what was the value of my path and the destiny I chose? Who was I? what was the thing that defined myself. Was I right or wrong. That was really unimportant looking into the ceiling that was located into the far away distance. Its colors changed constantly and green whirlpoolic energy currents moved on it sinking upwards, going through it, towards an unknown destination. Creating a buzzing sound which echoed into the distance, making a symphony of strange sounds. Suddenly I heard it, the singing of two angels, watching with surprise as the girls started singing making the toys dance. Arua's and Aya's voice like tiny bells radiated their structure, showing the true bond these sisters had. The song sang in their own language, in a dialect that was already forgotten in words used by soul people. A very strange beautiful chorus composed of two people that matched their voices perfectly, accompanied by flute and piano playing in distance. Dancing elegantly and very slowly. A strange and sad song followed after all, a hollow sound accompanied by the sounds created by this strange place. A song of captivity and love to their captor, a song that made me cry. Melodic expression of purest emotion love, directed at a heart that was entrapped in a trap of its own creation, a desperate plea for salvation for the one that denied God. Strong melodic voice, a harsh and yet delicate prayer, made by a person who would not turn back, a girl that was willing to step into the darkness to protect her love one, even though he was the source of all darkness. One that might be forgiving in the name, a girl that was ready to pay the ultimate price just to see him smile, just to wipe one of his tears. A desperate plea and a beautiful song a melodic and sad act of self sacrifice. A very strange chorus, one that had rhythm taken outside all boundaries a feat of prayer that could never be described. Despite the evil there was still hope and the girl believed in it with all her heart, this act of a prayer, singing in dance and accepting her fate asking nothing for herself. This was her only true wish, a wish that made me realize Arua's true devotion. She started singing more and dancing wildly not being afraid, giving it all to please the God, in order to ask for forgiveness, and for safety of the two people she loved. She believed her song would reach the stars and God himself and that someday her wish will come. A beautiful prayer one that was supposed to break all barriers and reach the spirit world. Her voice was powerful and crazy melodic, powerful her words would pierce anyone's heart, that kind of weapon was truly amazing. Shocked I continued to observe the display of her emotions, the power and energy she invested in her performance. Her song resonated somewhere in my soul, making me wonder what is love. The sudden silence made me a bit awry as everything changed so suddenly. I could lose my mind if not careful not knowing where this battle ends realizing the true powers of darkness. Only now I started to feel the seriousness of the events that were supposed to take shape so suddenly and drastically before my eyes. The tribal beat continued as the sounds intensified, making me wonder. The unreal feel of this situation intensified a strange waltz was played before my eyes, and blood covered the surface of the floor, just what was sacrificed before my eyes. I slowly moved forward but found nothing to be the same, as the golden floors changed into

muddy blood. Pink or purple aura filled the room as the dance macabre was performed before my eyes, making me step back. This was true power of the soul people and incredible strength of this complex. A white ghoulish figure performed a tango with a skeleton dressed in Victorian era female dress. My eyes widened making me seriously wonder what happened. A ghoulish aura intensified as growls intensified. Making me prepare myself to battle. A fight was to begin so suddenly I was all alone. I looked above and saw to my surprise stars on purple blue sky, and next to me old ancient graves. I found myself on cementary, as graves were opened from below. A zombie resurrection was taking place on my eyes while I realized that someone trapped me in a very powerful spell. The ghoulish demons howled and red eyes stared at me from above, this was the depth of darkness. A greenish moldy bodies were coming out from their coffins, and opening their graves, increasing in numbers. Gathering in a huge crowd outnumbering me as I heard a familiar squeech, above me on old trees billions of red eyes were staring, these were Galamouth's shadow birds. It was their trap. The Zombies rushed at me making me jump away and put my hands forwards shooting white energy beams, being desperately outnumbered I rushed at them cutting through with my Lasersword. The Zombies were walking slowly methodically one step at a time just like toys in Aarua's and Aya's room. I cut them down frantically but they were coming in numbers far beyond my control. Suddenly explosions came out from the ground making me avoid them and cut through the zombies. Green blood splatted on the graves. While the silver moon shined in the skies changing colors, becoming blue then red, golden, silver, white and yellow. The zombies growled wildly, while I shot them down with my energy beams avoiding the explosions and also trying to fend off the shadow birds that attacked me. Killing few of them and making them more angrier as they continued their attack from above. Suddenly the scene changed and something was formed, a shadow was sitting and smiling. A white dressed girl played with a ball her eyes were red wearing a fancy hat she smiled while continuing to look at me. The girl stood up and started dancing as the zombies disappeared as I was watching very shocked at the new figure. The girl looked like someone I knew from the past, formed out of blood, from darkness. She had a strange smell. She continued to look at me with her red eyes, her raven hair made me realize, that she was the shadow birds. She continued to play with her ball enjoying herself as I wondered how to escape. „finally we meet” She finally spoke singing her own song. I looked at her shocked a bit, feeling her incredible power and walking back „who are you?” I asked hesitantly knowing she was truly devilish and could cause serious troubles. „I am the daughter of Darkness, Princess of illusion Mystica” She replied looking at me as shadow birds sat at her arms. I realized that it was her controlling the birds while she petted them gently. „you're the one that hurted my pets, I cannot forgive that” she replied looking at me with fiery eyes and continued speaking „these pets are one with me they are a part of my soul, my faithful eyes, they accompany me and help me with my task” She continued looking at me and smiling „that's why I cannot allow you to kill them” she replied looking at me with disgust but also a hint of interest as well „they were the ones that attacked me first” I replied „Silence!! I did not give you permission to speak” she answered looking at me with superiority and a madly in human way. „Oh seriously and whom the hell you are!” I asked smirking looking for the way to get out. „I am the eternal guardian who's role is to observe and remain in shadows, a spy in the land of darkness and the one that binds the most twisted soul known in the entire universe, and I know whom

you are ! the fool that opened the grave a boy that caused the calamity to repeat itself again, a one that should never come. This war boy it is all your fault, have you not meddled in affairs beyond your control the mad prince would continue his sleep, and I would continue to guard his grave” Mystica replied annoyed and walked slowly towards me as a strange song was playing from somewhere „ my fault ! it was Dantalion who started it !” I replied angry looking at her „ It was your fault cause you were the one left standing, have you died at the grave Galamouth would not escape !” Mystica shouted out to me, making me look with disbelief and shock. I didn't want to believe in her words feeling terrified „ what are you saying it's my fault !” I looked at her with anger feeling accused unjustly. while Mystica continued to walk towards me and pointed her hand at me „Your existence is to blame, you're the cause of this calamity” She replied without hint of emotions continuing to look at me with her creepy eyes. I wondered how to end this unpleasant confrontation, while the birds continued to squeak and started to attack me while I jumped away. „ Its useless to try and run away” Mystica replied as tentacles from blood started tying on my legs. Making me scream and rip them apart as I jumped away using my force. „so you have some power in you” Mystica replied looking at me smiling „this is perfect I rarely have anyone to play with, you will die in agony” She smiled while talking as dark energy gathered in currents around her legs. „witness the powers of the abyss the strength of illusion” She continued looking at me a bit sadly. Making me wonder what was exactly she disgusted. „you know there's not many to talk with in these shadows, I existed in this space for so long, looking at the death souls, forgotten in the abyss, protecting the balance, envious of light that shines for others. I will not forgive anyone that walks in the light, not realising the value of existence. The souls condemned to damnation haven't got this luxury. just to be able to talk, or smile seems like a fleeting dream. Locked forever between light and darkness my sole reason was to watch and guard, and now I don't even have that anymore, cursed being existence that came into forbidden space, what have you done. Darkness that spreads which was locked inside will cause serious injury to the state of world, Do you understand that ? foolish boy a child that walked into the abyss. You should have never come here and then, be gone stop existing leave now die !!!!” Mystica continued to shout angrily looking at me with these eyes. I looked at her angrily „ I should stop existing, why I wonder ? when it wasn't my fault I tried to stop this from happening to defeat the darkness...” I replied „ but you failed you shouldn't intervene it's not a game, this is a real threat” she replied looking at me seriously, making me even more angrier because of her unjustified attacks on me. Despite looking like a 10 year old she could control powerful magic as dark serpents arose from the ground their eyes shining brightly. Making me run away, as the serpents growled attacking trying to eat me alive, while I summoned my light magic, making them disappear as white aura covered them. „ Is that the best you have, because if that's it then you should give up. I won't die even if you wish for it, I'm the one that walks eternally meddling into others affairs whether they like it or not, I'm their eternal judge” I replied shooting a white lightning at the girl as she avoided dancing, as if she was playing a game. While dark birds dived trying to hit me while I avoided being hit making them squeak angrily. „ You arrogant fool” She replied looking at me with disbelief. while red energy whirlpools were shot at me, forcing me to erect a silver barrier breaking the current in half, making it explode in orange flames. Creating dark smoke that covered the entire area. „ I told you already, I'm the one that will vanquish this darkness” I replied looking at the girl seriously

as she continued to look at me with disbelief. „thats impossible you cannot do that !” Mystica shouted angrily. „that is why I intervened and will intervene again” I replied again calmly „stop with that arrogance you're the bringer of doom to us all” she replied angrily „ the only thing I bring you is freedom” I looked at her touching her face making her look at me shocked. She then hit me in the face and jumped away quickly looking at me angry, and than calming down she continued to stare at me „that is impossible cause I never was free to begin with” Mystica admitted as the whole scene including her dissapeared and I found my self sitting at the fountain in Arua's and Aya's room as they both continued to sing together as if nothing happened. They haven't realized I was battling an unseen enemy. I continued to stare a bit lost in thought wondering about the child lost to darkness. Everything might as well begun with Albert Pike and his mad plan about the world order, he was the man that planned the events that profoundly shaped my world. The last three wars that changed our planet earth and gived birth to the future.Two of the first conflicts indeed went according to his visions, but the third one went out of their control. Due to invention of a very powerfull communication tool, the worlds first global computer network. Culture started to act independly from their markets, no longer bound by greed , yet stil remain a prisoner of money. Albert Pike himself, atleast according to the documents I once read, claimed to be the survent of the Lucifer, and this in turn was seen as the servitude towards the Anti-Christ.It remain unknown just how much of it was truth and how much of it became coincidence.But the Antichrist came, when no one believed he wil, looking very adorably and ordinary. There was no demonic traits,not even sinister eyes, and yet his ambition was sinister. The man appeared shortly after a majour breakdown in worlds politics accured. After the Leaders of Earths religions were suddenly assasinated, by terrorists of unknown origin, in fact working for the Antichrist. One odd thing or maybe not odd at all, he didn't come from the country that people expected him to come, and at first wasn't even treated seriously. Thats because he was very young, to conduct politics. Adleast the old generation of politicians treated him as a child that itself couldn't bring harm,they were wrong. These fools underestimated the true power of darkness,handing over their countries over to that ruler. Not knowing why or how they just simply gotten ridden of themselves by their constant competition. Antichrist didn't do anything for most of the part, he might as well not been a cruel or violant person. But one dissilissioned with humanity. As all leaders he could appear to listen and converse politelly with the common people,but he couldn't understand them nor he had a will to do so, the Antichrist was a soulless person. A puppet of forces that were beyound him, he was merelly a conductor of satanistic influences. Everything begun with the restoration of the temple of Jerusalem,when it returned to its former place. It sacrificed a past building belonging to the muslim religion. This was enought,the followers of the second religion were feed up with the treatment they got from these that claimed they followed the first religion. Tensions were large and always growing, majour breakdowns in economics didn't help settle difference's, in fact the system whores made things worse each day, in the day peace was annouced. Three huge armies attacked the western world. The great Chinese army attacked Russia,the Arabs started an offensive which aim was to destroy the newly restored state of Israel. Germany invaded Poland, but with paranoic Russia and angry United States, with notes from all countries of the world. The German forces were repelled in 6-7 days,and Germany was put under occupational arrest. Their independence wasn't threatened, but the German army was used

elsewhere protecting Israel or helping Russia. Poland became a bread basket, and this was the reason the country was not only spared but in fact placed in protection, and its citizens devoted to farming, production, culture. Even if the soldiers of both sides appeared in Poland it was only to gather resources. Polish economy thrived because everyone needed the Polish industry, this is where companies were moved and conducted their productions safe from dangers. The importance of the Polish state remaining as the library and bread basket of the world. Came from many serious calculations. The war spiraling out of control, no one knew exactly who fought who or where the main theater of war was located. That's why the politicians of all countries including the German chancellor decided to build a model state in one of the countries that wasn't attacked, the Germany wanted to annex Poland and establish a legal and authority system based on their own, but the leaders of other countries stopped that from fulfilling, reminding that Poland and its people must remain unharmed, in the face of natural catastrophes that plagued the world during this war, the importance of Poland only grew, and it was in Poland where the world continued its existence, paradoxically both the Anti Christ and the remaining Pope had offices there. Although the Antichrist didn't rule the Polish state he adhered to the Polish rule, he was more of a chief of state in exile and was supposed to return to his war ravaged country after the war. The Pope was killed when visiting a devastated Rome, had he stayed in Poland even though the proximity to the Antichrist's mansion was near, he would remain safe, but once he left Poland and arrived at Rome his life was targeted, and he was killed by the muslim army. He was the first and so far the only black skinned Pope. Interestingly enough. The Polish Pope John Paul II, and the German Pope Benedict XVI were viewed as the same pontificate, hence why in ancient texts there was no mention of the following pope since he indeed continued the work of the sun, and was a sun himself. Both were the labourers of sun. Only two more Pope's followed and corruption took hold over the vatican and other religion centers. These were the thoughts I was lost into looking at the golden ceiling, in Arua's and Aya's room. Believing my self to be far from such troubles, how many billions of years have passed? The names of these countries, like names of ancient mythical lands, yes these were already mythical times I thought to my self. Not Much I remembered from that time choosing to forget most of it, remembering only selected images and some pain and sorrow. Nothing pleasant, nothing to return to. So why did I think about these ancient lands, their politics. Why now think about the home I so desperately tried to forget? Why did I want it to forget it so badly?

The starting point of our civilisation, it was being made more and more clear that something important was being hidden in the shadows of past, just as I made a full circle with my existence and now was going to do it again, I returned to a point I passed once already. That's why answers to this situation were already mine, but buried down deeply in my mind, they weren't simple to retrieve. After analysing some elements from the past, I still understood I knew nothing. I missed out on something key here, very fundamental to this whole mess. Someone else could as well pull the strings behind Galamouth. That at least was a probability. Real and Unreal at the same time, this was the world we lived in, where the most unrealistic things were in fact real. Devoting my existence to unknown, passion and love, eternally pursuing new events. I also gathered knowledge that should be shared, or at least I felt it should be shared. In my opinion making other understand the truth improved their lives, giving meaning, faithfulness and love. But the question remained did I see truth or was

it just something I considered a truth. The truth was that What I perceived as truth might be a lie to others, and that was the truth as well. Cause others had truths they chose to believe in just like my self. In other words I wasn't anyone special in fact I done exactly the things others do, choose a part of reality I fancy and live there. I could only accept part of the world which I choose . It was impossible to get it all, even for me. For me the world was different than the one these system whores lived in, although we shared a space and we could talk to each other, they were in their reality and I was in my own, and because of that we were both criminals and hero's in their respective worlds. For them I was a criminal, for me they committed hideous crimes. In truth both stances were correct, cause from their perspective I broke the law, the law that governed their reality. The same I could tell about them they broke the laws I adhered to in my own reality , in the world I belonged. It is important to note that a reality cannot be created by one person, its not a creation of my self or a single entity in that sphere. Instead a reality consists of interactions from many people and demons. In fact even interactions between both realities constitute another bigger reality. This is how the society works, thats why even though the Outcasts rejected the formal society, they were a part of a bigger society that was composed from both Formal system survivors and the Outcasts interacting. The world became bigger despite the whorish attempts to make it smaller, or maybe its thanks to them this new outcast world formed in the first place, have they not closed the doors there would be no need to form the new to protect these that couldn't get there, because all would belong, which would create a conformistic society with only one set of corporate values. Thats why its an interesting paradox that it was the rich who created the culture of the poor, giving poor reasons, tools and space to form their new outcasted society, even though the rich only wanted to throw away the poor like trash. These wastelands became a new thriving land, the sphere of workers developed their own communities and societies despite being slaves, in their own society they weren't slaves but workers that were important to the corporation. These were the world they believed in and thats why they worked hard to protect it. The same is true for us, we also consider ourselves important in our community , not feeling sorry for ourselves and even pitying the rich enslaved corporate world as we see it. Ironically we also respect them, and they show signs of respecting us and even fascination. They need us to create myths they feed to their population, legends good moral stories, we do the same telling good moral stories just hero's in these stories might become the enemies in other side stories . Which is really as that more funny, when you think about it we both tell the same story in our cultures , but from a different angle. Truth that was seen by my eyes was therefore partial, but it was true even bare to the point of being offending. Of course the whole idea of offence especially the way its was performed was made to hide the truth. The rich always invented elaborate tactics , to hide the injustice they created, which never seemed to work as everybody knew , what was the things they tried to hide so desperately. The amusing question thats on everybody lips since all time, why the hell they even bothered. Even if a poor person is more wiser than the rich person is, it is the rich person that becomes influential and considered the wisest one. In reality only few times poor people were elevated to high status in the society. In the system Yahweh being one of such examples. Usually the poor die being poor whatever they do, they won't become influential unless they learn to create a place of their own. Outcasts can lead but only in a society composed of outcasts because there is no rich to impose their laws. Thats why the system



always tightens its reality and makes it closed to new things, because a poor person can become the best author, or the best actor or be famous but only if he learns to use the tools and distribute them in other means than the ones invented to protect the established order. By creating brand new media's making the world grow by sharing information. Creating much more content not for the sake of market or money, but for joy, freedom of knowledge, and to help us form the universal core of knowledge that is used freely by those that live in the system, and outside it. This knowledge is given to all that inhabit the universe, to all these willing to seek it out and able to understand it. They have permission to use this incredible power and transform their lives with knowledge of God and things he created. This is also the knowledge of mankind and our entire world that is presented to you in my text. Not everything can be understood, all need time. Understanding is a long process, learning takes time. Even longer than one single reading. I myself am just a single conductor, not the best one, as everyone I too have limits that don't allow me to send a clear message. Cause I myself might not understand what the reader needs to read, that's why the true truth must be discovered by the reader himself or herself. I can only point you to one direction just to the one I taken. That's my greatest limitation to understanding the true I could only understand the truth from my own perspective and that could cloud my judgment, yet ridding myself of this error would mean stopping to be human, despite the fact I was already a demon. Not wanting to lose my humanity, but also not thinking of myself as mere human, being something between these two races, I considered my present existence an extension of my human life but at the same time I didn't want to have nothing to do with my past, trying to make it go away. The past that contained all my repressed memories, and the core of who I am. The mystical knowledge that led me to become the one I am now. I felt like coming out from a huge dream, as if my entire essence was in sleep for a very long time. Indeed I felt these memories to dwell in within me, but I couldn't not understand. These small images appeared to be foreign, different from the life I had now somehow unrelated to this fight. Somethings I buried deep down in my mind, I wondered why these things would become important now, when they weren't as that important than? Did my human life contain a message I forgotten or was unable to read back then? For many millions of years, for every long time I devoted my entire existence to experiencing, both darkness and light that were familiar to me, I even experienced the corporate worlds and distant dream lands. Reaching towards skies, looking into the distant stars. Sometimes a single glance begun another huge journey that would last for thousands years, bringing more and more information. A passionate dance of life and full embracing of all cultures present in this world, both in the above and below even there where there was supposed to be nothing. This is the truth culture and experience exists everywhere and everyone carries an incredible power to create, something new and un-expected. Life is interesting only when something un-expected occurs. Such is trivia, which can create important fundamental things. That also can be my message I try to carry on. Life is full of surprises and un-expected things, because life itself is a surprise. Sometimes bad things happens but other times something pleasant does too. My lesson thought life was to never give up and to walk forward, not being afraid to confront things head on. Only then it would become interesting. That's why I had mixed feelings because I liked this event that unfolded, knowing that something grand is happening on my eyes. This was important and I was a part of it also. The room was calm I observed the girls playing, happiness and innocence. There seem to be nothing wrong with this

picture, except the fact I was casually walking in the enemy base. interacting with enemy without any concern. A spy or a prisoner allowed to walk freely in the middle of the enemy forces organising themselves even for me it was unusual. But I was given the unusual ability to do the impossible things to fight without any real power and to defeat darkness without using a sword. To defeat an enemy without any weapon was my mission, one that was truly impossible. My mad mind was set, I would attempt that knowing I could not win, because winning this battle wasn't important. It was just about revealing the knowledge and using this situation to yet again deliver a message. But in order to succeed first I needed to defeat my self, my own conscious fear. That's why I needed to have no regard for my self. This situation was a test for my self as well. Would I find a way to fight without any weapons, the courage to carry out my purpose. The courage to believe in my self and others that are around me, although we might be weak. Building a union within an enemy base? Was that possible? This was in fact a battle of spirits, a battle where fighting itself had little value, for it was only a manifestation. A show to perform and nothing else. The world would be saved only then when light starts shining. Blood and money couldn't protect this world. Something true was necessary. This is how wars are fought in my world. Importance of military strategies is just for show, like in all movies people like epic battles. So there are granted them and allowed to fight, whether they lose or win. This is just a game they should be happy that they were granted the ability to fight and do something and not fear the end as it always will come eventually. Change happens always despite the lost wars or the ones victorious the winning side also will lose it one day. This is the culture of war, a battle that has no meaning but serves only to create stories. So is this event really meaningful. Is our world in danger? No it's not threaten the battle is here for you to experience meaning of your life. Galamouth will understand his mistake cause the darkness in him will destroy itself in the final battle and he will be reborn into the light, gathering the knowledge he wanted. But by telling you this I might have just deprived you of the whole fun, so therefore forget what you just read. Be afraid and mobilize the world is still in danger help us to win the battle, but fear not we will be victorious. This is a different reality that you're experiencing by reading or listening to this text. It's different from what you're used to. Different from what you know. That is the role of culture to transport people to different distant realities. to give a sense of unknown, and to make familiar that which is not. True creation is a bridge way to things that cannot be understood in the present time. The purpose is for you to take part in this journey and witness this battle as if you were there. Fear not for you are protected from its consequences by this form. The information that will appear in your mind will show you the image of this situation remember to be thankful that you're a part of this incredible reality a simple casual prayer is more than enough. This is the form that was chosen to present these events, whether you accept it or not, is and always will be your own choice. For you can treat this as any other text you came across, the purpose is to teach you through entertaining that is the role of culture, that should be the role of religion too. To teach and inspire others nothing more, helping to take the first step. Protecting the vineyard that should be the role of priests, which they have forgotten. Why the institution created in the name of God, went so far astray from his teachings. Why priests cannot love others? why cannot they teach love? Why love was made into a forbidden sin? Was it truly what God wanted. What is true love? and is pleasure derived from love even though it might not be proper, always a sin? Can love hurt? What is an act of love? People always like to name

people who do bad things, but in this madness we forgot that we were supposed to punish the things and not people themselves. Gossip always forms and everybody loves to read about sex scandals, or other abuses. But what they don't read is the most important thing, why is it bad and so wrong in the first place. People who read about evil people don't understand why their actions are evil, and in time they repeat these actions. Considering that if others don't know of it then the action isn't evil, cause something is evil when others say it's evil. That is how it's all understood. A crime is evil cause the lady from the news said so, or it was written in the news paper that the crime is evil, but when thinking people think like children „ well if no one else knows about it then it's fine im not like that guy from tv cause no one else except me knows about it” That's the justification they use to commit crime. This is also the justification for ignorance , the victim is asked to sit quietly because it's evil to talk about it ever, and if the victim is quiet then the action wasn't evil . Nothing happened cause no body is talking about it, therefore nothing bad really happen. What you think of this explanation ? Don't forget how many times you acted like that. Others don't even understand why such actions might be evil, and think doing crime and evil stuff are just a game. Because they understand a part of the truth, and see how evil people talk about evil stuff pretending to be good, while in reality they're even worse than these that are labeled as criminals. The criminals are often judged by even worse criminals that is the reality of the system. This is pure darkness born from ignorance , that made me crazy and to become like I am. but I don't regret going that path, cause I know it's all a lie and it's these that think that are normal truly insane. Not understanding their enslavement and the way they reek of decay. So the sad truth is, these that think of themselves to be normal will consider my writings as writings of someone with a serious mental dis-order. For them what I say here is insane, others will also not understand. So why even bother to write and to send this message into a such world ? What is the purpose of me wanting to share these events with people who may not understand the true contexts ? What do I want to prove ? Do I even have anything to prove ? Yes even now there is nothing, no need. No reason I just wanted to and that's all. The reason I'm sharing this important event with you is because of my whim, because I merely wanted too. In fact I might just have done something evil, like a crime and say the same. I did it cause I wanted too. Wouldn't I at least be honest. To the point of arrogance ? Because for me it's all that matters. At least I would be honest with my self. This is the truth I was a part of these events because I wanted too. Despite it was dangerous it was just something I wanted to try and there would be nothing to block my path. Even if I fail in this impossible task, it's still something I wanted to do, and I understand it very well I can fail, I'm not an idiot thought some of you would think that, but I'm doing always whatever I want to and I'm making sure others do the same and aren't forced to anything , that is my role as the Judge of eternity. It may sound selfishly, but indeed it's our right , we all are granted free will and are allowed to do whatever we want, if we truly want it. But the question is whether we want it or are deceived by others into wanting it, we make wrong choices cause we won't sit back and think of them for a while. The art of making choices is instrumental in having a good life, whatever we do. But most people, demons and angels forget about it and let others the system decide about the choices we should make. This is wrong, cause we're the ones bearing responsibility for the things we do, therefore we need to decide about them. Even if a soldier kills someone on orders, he is still the one that killed. He will bear responsibility for the killing, that's why the soldier should be allowed to choose whether he wants to kill or not. I also done evil things and

faced punishment for them, and will do more evil things and be punished for them as well. That is my responsibility, the same goes with good things for which everybody will be rewarded when the time comes, it all happens when one least expects it. But it does happen. This is what some call Karma. Others refer to it as fate, there is no escaping the choice we already made, but there is no reason to fear them. Cause these choices are the part of whom we are, if we want to there's always a way to change the path we're on. No body can do anything about it, if we change, if we feel we need to we will and no one can force you back, little courage and the scary things always disappear. This was something Mystica should understand, that it's time to change her existence and free her from that prison. This was her reward for being a loyal guardian.

Freedom was her grace, but she was too scared to understand that obviously. There were others just like her imprisoned in their fear, and they should be saved that's why I continued my journey in this base, this was my only priority. For this was one of the small steps I needed to take to build up my strength and face Galamouth, and until then he could watch me observe and intervene. To witness this with his own eyes. How a change can be produced with simple modest means. Pain and suffering always accompanied life. The fundamental questions couldn't ever be answered, without first understanding the significance of pain and suffering in everyone's life, the importance it had in the procedural cleansing of our souls. The darkness caused pain which main role was to suck out the darkness from our own cores, in that way properly used pain could strengthen the life, but pain shouldn't be constant, or self-inflicted. There is time for pleasure and there is time for pain. Over-excessing in either pleasure or pain, will have their consequence. Every structure that inflicts too much pain is therefore wrong, for God created suffering in this world to heal the wounded consciousness and allow true knowledge and spiritual brotherhood to grow. Through hardships bounds are to be created, but the system took pain to a whole new level, creating miserable existence of sorrow and pain, forgetting the true purpose. That's why it's necessary to unbind the limits that bounded too much, to let people loose from too much burden letting them carry only as much as they're able to. That's why this event of darkness was allowed to grow, this seed planted in one being. His holy purpose in the unholy work. Galamouth's darkness was planned as an event that will free the world, but not in the way he thought it would. Galamouth was oblivious to the true purpose of his mad scheme, but I knew what had to be done. The reason I was there was simple, to bring love. Freedom and self-awareness, to free the bound souls and that was my task. The calming and soothing sound of water flowing into the golden fountain. Made me feel relaxed, and loose myself in these thoughts as I continued looking at the chaotic room, noticing toy soldiers still walking in their march. This was truly a chaotic place I thought in my head, wanting to express myself freely. Thinking about the importance of self-expression, thought many different things, like art, culture. Even these attacks others use help them express themselves, indeed the art of war can be quite artful. Since ancient times weapons were given cultural significance, often decorated in different sometimes abstract manner. While the ones who used them were often implemented in folk tales, eventually leading towards creation of what we know is culture. Culture was born through war, and these ancient tales of warriors fighting other warriors or even mythical beasts. Great stories of ancient military escapades that we so used to reading now, imagining just how different these old lands were, that the place we live in now. It's not so surprising that if people living in these lands could read stories from our world, they would try to imagine how our world looks like. Even being envious they cannot see it

by their own eyes. Let's begin this one more time, the water was filling the fountain, soothed all of my senses, this was a truly magical place. Looking at the golden floors and hearing these sounds that echoed, through the entire complex structure. Making me understand this place a bit. Chaotic existence, a chaotic structure engulfed in an almost divine melody.

#### Chapter 4 „The manifestations of GOD“

In a distant enclosed reality distortions appeared, creeks filled up with blood. The red substance like magma created dark smoke. Which steamed with incredible force and pressure, the temperature reached its incredible climax, creating a powerful pressure that fused with incredible masses of air, created a terrifying spectacle. Blue particles of energy appeared in the smoke, small silver blue lightnings flashed, brightening up the gray mass. A huge force was being set in motion as the pressure forced whirlpools into creation mixing, both cold and hot winds, creating an explosive tornado's. Making brown rocks fall from the surrounding dark brown cave walls. These rocks mixed into the tornado, ripping the winds and releasing incredible brightly yellow energy into distance, causing a huge roar to manifest itself. The display was accompanied by powerful light filling the area, the cave walls were dry from constant heat that was applied by this phenomena. In these dangerous surroundings caves were dug up, by an ancient culture and a huge amount of people was working nearby. All dressed in gray, destroyed dirty cloths. Digging with simple primitive rock, utilities into the hot magma. Exhausted from the heat. Their gray faces shown traces of physical trauma, and countless abuses these people suffered.

Exhausted by the heat of the magma, and these explosions that took place above their heads, blinding them with bright light some of these people would simply fall into the lake, slowly get engulfed in redish flames and die in this agony. For most of them that was the only way to escape this terrible labour, their bones became dark during their lives making them feel this incredible agony. The fire killed them in few seconds. These that wished to remain alive were gathered in small groups and were forced into eternal labour. putting their rocks into the fire lake, gently touching and as if using a spoon trying to take away its magma, once this hard task was done, the person holding the rock spoon. Which was simply a huge grayish, spiky rock. Slowly stood up and walked back upwards into the small rising. Where dark knights were standing and a huge dark pot was located in, the middle of each two knights. The person holding the rock spoon, and slice of magma on top of it was to dump the magma into the pot, returning below to the magma lake, the purpose of these people gathered near the fire lake, was to harvest fire from that lake. The Dark Knights looked like stereotypical representations of demons, all wearing almost theatrically, metal masks covering their eyes. Looking like statues, in fact being statues. That were embedded with dark redish energy, which was used to control them. Symbols appeared on their metallic surface, showing green goblin faces. This was the program that was used to control them. This was a structure of dark caves surrounded by mazes created by the magma lake's and creeks. Impenetrable prison and a factory of some sort. All this was observed by a yellow haired and blue eyed woman, who seemed to be dressed in a brightly gold uniform. Gently correcting her hairs, she continued to gaze upon the

captured people. Looking at her silver trumpet tied up to her waste, this was her means of calling help. Hearing the growls of the energy winds being created, touching her golden armor that covered almost her entire chest. Breathing a bit harshly in this hot environment and trying to control her vision, also being exhausted from the pressure. She stood in a safe spot above the whole scene, but was threatened by the constant explosions of energy. Blinded each time it happened, trying to hide in the hole made in the cave wall, she used to observe the situation. From her spot she could see many craters, in every crater a fire lake created from orange magma, that carried energy particles in it. Around each fire lake a crowd of people digging into the lakes border and taking small, tiny bits of the lakes carrying them, like small ants. The place was similar to a beehive. People digging at the fire lake, being bees that carry food for the queen. Billions of craters like billions of honeycombs in a hive. This was a hive of energy that was used for Galamouth's evil ambitions, the woman picked up her trumpet and blown into it creating a silver blue energy sphere, that engulfed her slowly and small lightnings started to engulf the sphere as it rotated, very fast, flashing and engulfing the woman who stood up inside it, not being terrified. The sphere created a huge flash of light and disappeared. The sphere appeared in the middle of a silver road in a different dimension, fading away and freeing the woman as she slowly walked forward looking around the place. Observing the chaotic structure, composed of bizarre and misplaced surroundings. Walking in the middle of distortions. Above her a dark blue sky was located, looking as if it was badly drawn and paint was falling down on the silver floor. From these blue streaks eyes could be seen looking at the woman, she slowly walked observing the silver road that started to divide into numerous smaller paths, which themselves lead to a huge distorted vortex. Staircases that lead to nowhere, were located inside the vortex. The road itself shined in white aura, indicating purity and the vortex started shaping itself slowly, restoring a blurred image from which blue light appeared. The image restored shown a gate and it suddenly very slowly appeared allowing the woman to enter the gate, she slowly stepped inside the huge golden gate, and was transformed into a beautiful blue sky world. Under her feet green grass, with red flowers, a breeze touched her cheeks gently messing up her hair. Now the woman was walking on a planet. In the middle there was a blue lake located, covered and encircled by a huge forest, and the field she found herself walking in as she neared some old ruins were others were sitting. A huge crowd was gathered, composed of God's and their servants from all over the universe, talking and debating the current crisis, some of them again like children playing on the beach and in the water, appearing to be oblivious to threat that was created by the current events, others were just talking while sitting, drinking, tea, coffee or wine. Few sat tensely and were worried by the current events, the woman walked over to the huge white rock near some ancient Greek columns and knelt down in front of Yahweh who was sitting on the rock. The Old man looked at his servant and smiled, jumping down from the rock and walking over to her. „So how did it go?“ He asked looking at her, seeing her kneeling down and standing to him, in her golden uniform looking like a royal guard, which she was „It is as you suspected my lord, works have resumed in that place, Galamouth is trying to harvest that power again“ She replied looking straightly in Yahweh's face and continued after taking a breath „only this time it's happening on a massive scale“ She ended looking at him straightly as he made his way past her, touching her shoulder „I know what's he's up to dear Gabrielle, he's preparing a war, a war on God's and we should make our preparations as well“ Yahweh explained and walked down

the lake looking at the God's who started to observe him curiously. The Gods and Goddesses looked at Yahweh some with bizzare expression on their face. The sun shined brightly from above and the beautiful blue sky was filled with white clouds that didn't cover it ,creating a peaceful sight.

It was warm , making everyone feel relaxed and calm as they continued to look at Yahweh . Their hearts started beating fast suddenly, while Yahweh continued his speech which was of great importance to the Gods. The sun continued to shine on the gathered, sharing its warmth and love. Love is always described as a warm feeling, and that's how goodness becomes synonymous with light and darkness becomes hate. Cause darkness is nothingness and refers to no love. Hate is simply understood as lack of love as it became its opposite. However not feeling love to somebody doesn't necessarily mean we hate them. So what else is necessary to constitute hate ? Not only lack of emotions but also a very negative attitude that represents the opposite of things one does for those that they love. We protect the loved one and endanger those that we hate. Gods and Goddesses who all appeared on this small beach in their human forms all had people and other God's they hated or loved, therefore they too were subject to these emotions that were created by the human race. After all God's and Goddesses were the creations of human minds which were harvested and made into existence by the spiritual world Echelion to harvest energy from human or Demonic thoughts. Echelion created the material world to use it as a source of nourishment. A young Goddess named Lydia with black hair and blue eyes smiled , she was dressed in a long white dress with a big diamond on her chest. her smile was more beautiful than the smiles from the others and she was holding a black cat in her arms ,she stood up and asked „-What does it mean to live in the spiritual world without love? isn't love the one that makes us and the humans happy?“ making Yahweh smile as he walked closely to the girl smiling and looking at her ,replying to the question „Love brings both happiness and sorrow ,love means sacrificing yourself. It can bring a lot of happiness when two youngsters engage in passion, but it also brings a lot of pain when a son keeps vigil at his dying mother's bed. Both are signs of love but love , but it's a different love. To live without love can also mean to try to escape from something that is too hard to bear“ Yahweh explained looking at the girl slowly „but the question is can we live without love“ Yahweh continued asking his questions and she replied „You talk about the love between humans but what about us? Can a goddess like me love someone? and if yes what does it mean to love someone who won't live with you forever? Won't I feel lonely without that person?“ She came near him and showed him her hand „This hand isn't different from a human's hand but it can kill and give life...why can't I find love then?“ Yahweh looked at her „our laws forbid mixing of species to avoid problems like that, this is a reason a young inexperienced Goddesses are forbidden to love mortal man, we placed these rules so you won't get hurt by the sight of your love one dying. Cause we are destined to exist forever“ Yahweh walked away and sat on the white rock and looked at the inexperienced Goddess „Still you are forbidden to love a mortal man until you understand what true love is,once you're ready you will no longer experience sadness by losing someone. We are immortal and those that died become one of us once you finish your learning you'll know when the man whom you love may come to your realm or is he even ready to accept a Goddess as his partner“ Yahweh replied looking at Lydia who seemed to look at him a bit nervously. Lydia looked away and said " Why can't we fall in love with a God? and why do I have to be a Goddess and not a human? What if I live this life and go to be a human, will I be killed?“ She asked looking sadly while Yahweh

laughted „oh dear child who said you cannot love a God like yourself, no body forbids us to love each other and humans. You must understand that these regulations are suggestions to keep us safe, not all of them need to be obeyed. Sometimes certain God's or Goddesses go to far with these restrictions from pride, you yourself need to understand which rules should be obeyed and which shouldn't. When learning you need to first ask your own heart which restrictions are good and which are bad, we too are a gathering of both God's that serve the light and these that serve darkness. Some rules are meant to enslave even us and it requires wisdom to know for what purpose they were imposed my dear” Yahweh replied again trying to calm down the young Goddess. The Goddess looked at him sadly " Why didn't I feel love for a God from here then? Why am I all alone?" She asked sorrowfully , Yahweh looked at her seriously and walked towards her , patting her arm „are you lonely ? You cannot force love ,its a very unpredictable feeling it appears when you're ready ..that is when you will be in love ,only then you will know why you weren't able to feel it before” Yahweh replied and looked around the gathered. Some water that formed on the grass was falling down slowly hitting the ground. Making a quiet noise, that calmed the atmosphere. The water in the lake was slowly flowing towards the ground as well, touching it delicately while being splashed by some Gods who carelessly played in water. The winds blown slowly carrying a strange and magical song, a young Goddess stood in the center of the gathered and accompanied by a chorus ,from few heavenly maidens sang a strange ancient beautiful song. Which was a prayer similar to the one sung by Arua. Elements of nature were gathered and worshiped as another spell was invoked during the meeting. This happened during the conversation The Goddess named Lydia had with Yahweh. Zavebe smirked looking at the young Goddess amused, thinking about the words she said, wondering why would one waste his time on love. Being a corrupted dark angel himself, who in the past betrayed and murdered his companions, he couldn't understand the pain the young Goddess felt, instead preferring to correct his golden attire and looking into the Dark God Belzebub he chose to worship and follow. Belzebub, Zavebe's master was the God of money, corruption and greed. A God who feared Galamouth's wrath and just punishment for his crimes, but Belzebub was born from greed and avarice the world had and therefore constituted only the incarnation of every single greedy thought rather than being the creator of greed, the same was true with other God's which represented emotions and thought energies made by humans. In truth God's are created by humans and they represent their convictions, sometimes even evolving from humans after being possessed by these energies themselves. Gods and Goddesses how beautiful they were , were only tools used by Echelon and therefore ,shouldn't be worshipped, yet as every beings desiring authority they themselves create their cults. Thus God's and Goddesses were corrupt , spoiled and evil to some extent, yet among these spoiled and corrupt politicians there were few truly devoted to their cause and used their powers to guide the human race, rather than enslaving them. One of these God's was Yahweh who himself was a human. He became the ultimate priest like figure and a powerful patriarch to whom many look up to. Other God's became patriarchal figures themselves as well not always mis-using their powers. Because they were God's that served either the light or the dark side, this gathering was a joint gathering of both the Dark and the Light. For the enemy threatened entire existence. This was a rare occasion, and a very hard alliance. It wasn't easy for God's to put aside their differences and work together for they too were influenced by human emotions ,that give them their



birth. But they gathered together to try to defeat, Galamouth. The first one that discovered the hidden truths of the world. Galamouth was the first among the God's to comprehend the mystical knowledge of the universe, the knowledge that was to remain a mystery forever. This is what we call a Mysterium, and mysterium's are suppose to remain a secret, yet even so many will look for this knowledge thinking it will give them power, only to understand how weak they really are, cause that is the curse of the Mysterium. The curse that wasn't brought by any divine power, but by mere actions some take, before realising that everything has a consequence, a spiritual price one needs to pay. We all recieve rewards and punishments as parts of this spiritual price, thats why we sometimes suffer for someone else's mistakes, but if it wasn't fair than something positive will come our way. Cause the Universe will maintain its balance. The material world is precious to spiritual realm, cause its a place seeds grow, concepts develope and live on. You're world is a factory and a garden that sustain us living in the spiritual realm. The spiritual realm Echelion is like a river that rushes and splashes on the rocks which is you're world, but these rocks are important cause mold grows on them, and on this mold traveling fishes feed, thats why rocks in the river aren't a disturbance, these rocks save the fishes from hunger. The Humans are precious to God's cause they're the ones that sustain them, by giving theire energy and producing idea's which help the universe and the spiritual realm to grow, without that there wouldn't be anything. God created the material world, so we could live out our dreams and evolve, create and give birth to others, other world dimensions. It all starts from a single impulse created by the human brain. In order to succeseed with his mad ambition the Dark God Galamouth needed to cause injury to humans, God's knew that sooner or later Galamouth woud try to divide and break the human race, all of the God's were therefore detemined to protect the humans. Despite this never spoken , all Gods knew this in theire hearths. Because not all communication went in spoken language, there were other ways to communicate with each other that the enemy was un-aware, and althought it all looked like nothing was discussed. As God's were playing talking and Yahweh was having a conversation with a young Goddess Lydia about love, just as if nothing happened. The true conversation and debate took place spiritually, and emotionally. Instantly everything was analised, summarized and agreed on, and this all happened even before Yahweh stood up from his place, before talking to Lydia and even before Gabrielle entered the new meeting place. It happened in a instant that was the powerfull communication God's were capable of. The simple and universal language of thought of energies, emotions and visions. Without even speaking a single word one could communicate entirelyly this whole text in a single image, assuming the other could understand the image everything could be said in an instant. That was the form God's could talk of course for them even an image wasn't necessary just a feeling that was recognized, single feeling. That certain one thing described everything in a flash. That was the language God's and spirits used to communicate, but this language was hard to understand for one that wasn't among these God's cause this language also evolved. Of course even for me its to hard to describe what exactly was it, for you who never experienced its something hard to understand. But an instant is a instant it dosen't take long, instant is a single glance. Yahweh looked at all Gods and all was discussed as he looked on them for an instant. The moment he took notice of God's it was all already discussed and everything was communicated. All recieved the message and communicated theire own, it was over even before it begun. This is the only way I could explain this to you. A silver haired Goddess was sitting in the

center of the gathered on an ice throne, a bit above the other God's who were sitting on the yellow sands of the beach, she was sitting above them a young beautiful Goddess, her silver hair was bright as the sun. Through her eyes slightly open you could see how cold she looked at the gods. Her dark blue robe appeared black in sunlight. You could feel around her chills driven through other's auras. She have opened her eyes and looked at Yahweh and said, "If the gods are born from people's wishes, why they need love?". On her left hand is her crescent bracelet. She brought his hand to ear, touched her earring and closed her eyes. She got in harmony with all others gods, and using her telepathic power continues saying "We should love the people, they created us all with their desires they will destroy us if they will lose their faith in us. Yahweh, you were mortal, at least you, from all the Gods, should understand how much we depend on people ... " Yahweh walked back a bit and looked at her seriously kneeling before her, being something of both a servant and master to these God's, they all depended on his guidance „It's because I was once human, I understand the weakness of human soul” He admitted looking away and observing the forest in the distance „Humans have a unique power that gives birth to many wonderful things, it's called creation. It's a power we too inherited from them, humans have the capacity to experience many things. Both pleasure and pain, but they sometimes lack the will to understand” Yahweh looked up into the cold eyes of the Goddess, one of many that was created from human emotions. Hearing the words that Yahweh said the blue eyes of the Goddess become black, and her crescent shaped necklace began to shine. Each God and Goddess felt a massive energy coming from the Goddess with silver hair. They saw how a colorless sphere appeared close to her necklace and grow as big as the lake. She took the sphere in the left hand and said "Look one more time at what people made from their world, from your world Yahweh, I'd be grateful to disappear instead of seeing how will it be the end the world, Lydia, you may have given without to realize the hope and salvation of mortals". The sphere showed mortal world, in her all colors. After a short time, she rose up, raised her hand and the sphere became smaller and smaller till she got in Goddess hand and vanished. She glared once again at Yahweh with a cold look then sat back on her throne of ice. Yahweh smiled and walked away from the icy throne, creating a small circle, then doing another one in the sand outside the first one, then creating another and repeating this action till he made nine circles, that represented the solar system, he then drawn tiny spheres to represent planets. Yahweh then looked at what he drawn and smiled „Humans are capable of evil that's true but, have you ever saw how happy and proud they are when they achieve a goal. Have you ever asked a person named Neil Armstrong, how it felt being overwhelmed by darkness, or Copernicus who was just a bishop, how he figured out this.” Yahweh looked showing the Goddess what he drawn in the sand, using his cane. „Go and ask your questions to these two, you'll be surprised at their answer, this is humanity” Yahweh replied and looked seriously in the Goddess eyes while continuing „don't judge them by their weaknesses, they're not weak. There is no one without faults, but our fate ain't predetermined by our faults, but rather by our will to overcome them, this is true for humanity as well” Yahweh ended smiling. With a cold look the Goddess rose and headed to Yahweh, behind her the ice throne vanished. She stopped a few steps far Yahweh and said "You are still a mortal, aren't you?" then smiles evilly, continuing "humans made the taboo, sooner or later they will destroy everything they ever made! they can't trust themselves, they betray, hurt and kill, they may be creators ... but in my eyes ..." touch her earring "they are the

same , they destroy everything ". Belzebub who was sitting few God's away from the Goddess ,next to his dark haired angel Zavebe smirked, glaring. The vicious old man looked at Yahweh almost laughing „Poor Yahweh, believing in humans do you ?" he continued to mock him and stood up,dressed in dark cloth like robes, with golden serpent ornaments. Belzebub remembered the times when he too was mortal, and ruled over many humans,Belzebub was always a ruler, born from the ruler's race,destined to govern humanity, therefore even when he became a god, he still continued to be a ruler. „Not only do people not trust each other, they're also corrupt...this corruption leads the world to the brink of annihilation each time, even Christ himself was crucified because of the human lust, poor Yahweh do you really believe in their goodness ?"Belzebub asked mockingly, being proud of himself. Yahweh dressed in similar yet grey cloth like robes, that were a bit more dirtier, or atleast appeared to be more dirtier ,not made from the same precious material Belzebub wore, sat down on the grey rock and looked at Belzebub smiling „yes my friends I will continue to believe in the goodness inside them" Yahweh replied knowing too well he would be ridiculed by the dark God's, but in reality he held respect, among many of them. Because of both his uncommon faith in goodness and the incredible , even for a God ! will to help everybody. That's why Yahweh was given the position of the High priest among the God's and Goddesses that were just servants and messengers of the real God.As a dark Goddess , the young Goddess with silver hair , looked at the other dark Gods with her icy eyes , then once again looked at Yahweh and thought."they are so much alike ... yet he is dead " . She went to Yahweh and turned her back in front of him , looking at the Gods from his place , then said "if this man is enough brave to become a God yet to be a mortal in his heart , then you dear Dark Gods are inferiors to him . " then she turned back , looking at Yahweh's face , and slightly caressed his cheek with her left hand , then whispered "if mortals could reincarnate , I wouldn't mind him being you " then she returned to the place where stood the throne and made him reappear . Zavebe smirked and laughed, his eyes looked at the goddess mockingly, and yet somewhere in his heart he understood why the goddess took Yahweh's side „ is that so ? are we inferior to him ? ridiculous ,you all love to waste time" Zavebe smirked while replying angrily looking at the God's „were not inferior to anyone ! so shut up or I'll make you eat these words" Zavebe expressed trying to stand up only to have a golden sword stuck up to his throat by Gabrielle who walked up towards him, standing in front of him and looking straightly into his eyes „I suggest you calm down" Gabrielle replied looking at him seriously „you haven't changed at all...we don't need to fight among ourselves !!" she added looking at the dark Goddess with respect.The dark Goddess looked at Gabrielle and smiled . She raised her hand and in her hand appeared a beautiful necklace with a red powerful stone , then said to Gabrielle "from people's heart , hopes , anger , love and faith , were born one by one the time two celestial beings . They were cursed and bonded together to have the same fate. If one of them died the other one would die as well ... " then sadly touched her necklace , and continued "the two celestial beings were one and the same , yet their powers were opposed to each other , they were created by a small but powerful province , who named them Yin & Yang . Their power was absolute . They have always kept the balance ... till a horrible day came ... In the small province came a stranger who named himself as being The God upon the Gods . People believed in him and slowly forgot about their beloved Gods , letting them <<die>> slowly . Yin(evil) & Yang(good) felt how their powers flowed slowly , and right when they were to vanish Yang took his sister's hand and gave her all the power he had in order for her to survive , and he

vanished like he never existed ... weakened she lost her consciousness and when she woke up she was alone in a place with darkmaterial , and she stood there and reborn as a Goddess . A Goddess who is neither good neither dark , who don't have need of people to exist and give her power . A another kind of God . " the Goddess rose and went to Gabrielle and put on her neck the collar with red stone saying " this it was the collar that gave to that man power , this is the collar who destroyed the balance , yet I'm giving this to you because I know that sooner or later you will have need of power and no-one will help you , as I had need and my brother sacrificed himself for me ... Some day , Gods and Goddess you will vanish with you mortal , but I will exist forever neither feeling pain , loneliness or madness , or pleasure . As a curse I cannot die , cannot love , cannot vanish ... " then she returned to her throne of ice , looking at the rest of the Gods and Goddess , then glaring with her scary-devil eyes to Yahweh . Yahweh understood why she glared at him, he knew that God that came and destroyed her beloved brother. It was non other than Galamouth who used his powers to corrupt the people, in order to weaken these God's. Yahweh could only look sadly on the grass observing the beetles as they fought on it. Seeing Yahweh distressed look , the young Goodness with silver hair said " whatever Galamouth wants we are many , combined we can create a huge energy ... yet what kind of God is Galamouth ? What do you know about him Yahweh ? In a war we must know the weakness and the strengths of our enemy . Yahweh , tell us" She asked looking towards Yahweh who looked at her. He than stood up and looked at the gathering starting his ancient tale:

„Lord Galamouth was always a very bizzare God,just as my self he was born a human. He was mine teacher, actually together with the present here Bal we were his aprentice, at that time I was just an orphan. Who was adopted by this strange man, it was back on earth billions of eons,years ago or even further in my past, forgive me but its hard to recall such distant memories, we lived in a country named Zion. A creation established under the great Dutchy of Polandia. Zion was administrated under the five consulates, of which the present here Bal was the closest to my hearth. The desert country ,established after centuries of a civil war, surved as the Polandian's military space base and secret research center. People of different races gathered under a global religion. Earth anno domini 666666 I can clearly remember the date cause of this unique number. The number that in our culture inspired many fears and curiosity. the first part of the year number 666 is the traditional symbol of Satan which was suppose to be the ultimate Dark God a rival to the God of light we worshiped,Earth religion was based on dualism, which claimed that there are two God's the God Creator , master of light to which we all prayed, beeing his followers and the God Destroyer whom we described as the Satan. We humans couldn't accept the fact that the Good loving God creator and the Evil vengfull God destroyer were in fact the same God and that both Good and Evil existed to maintain a universal balance,and allow us mortalsto choose our path,in that time I used to be mesmerized by the tiny stars I saw from the desert outside the building me and Lord Galamouth used to live in. Now what kinda building it was, you should understand my Lord and my teacher had a very peculiar way of choosing the place to live in. The Building itself were ruins of an anciet temple, a very small temple, probably an ancient christian monastery in which he stoored many books, yes I remember these ancient occultic books he gathered. Galamouth was always busy with whatever he was doing, beeing constantly consumed in his research. Our meeting...how did I actually came across the mad lord ? Now I remember it, it was the middle of a very cold night. Beeing hungry I walked the

streets of the empty metropol, while other children slept in their warm beds. I was one of these childrens nobody cared about. Cold nights and hot days were common in this desert country, poverty and hunger was a huge problem. Statistically 45 % of population of Zion was impoverished and many children were in the same situation. It was a very cold night, weak and hungry I made my way through the alleys, my fate uncertain. The smell of the rotten corpses of these that died of hunger or disease before me was filling the air, the pain that caused me to vomit. Living beyond the human society, being thrown out, without family or even a place to stay. Ordinary people treated us like garbage, no one in the right mind would lend a hand to us. He was standing like a shadow in this darkness, the air unusually dense and the blood smell filling the air. I wasn't aware whether this was a dream or reality. The Dark Lord Galamouth stood in the middle of a huge street, close to the center his eyes observing the corpses, taking notice of me, just as if he came looking for me. The man dressed in a dark cloth walked closer to me, nearing very quickly. Even then I could realize that this was no human „Is this death ?” I used to wonder as the figure stood in front of me „You'll make a nice specimen boy ..come with me if you wish to survive” He spoke to me and walked away, leaving me startled on the streets, hungry weak and without any hope. I was willing to follow even death itself. I followed the Dark Lord, who soon became my mentor.” Yahweh ended looking into the silver hair Goddess eyes „What was Galamouth like? for a time he was master of life and death in my eyes” said Yahweh answering the Goddess question. „One of his notorious traits I could elaborate about would have to be his dedication to his work, and collecting information. Even then his ambition was his main purpose in life, The Lord would always elaborate on the decaying state of affair and how rotten the souls of humans are, he despised it and dreamed to change it, he always told me that fulfillment of his desire would bring peace and happiness in the new world, he wished to restart the world according to his own visions...and naturally he wouldn't stand any opposition. No one was to defy his desire, The Lord is very intelligent and skilled in psychological manipulation, capable of understanding and even providing the needs of others. He has traces of empathy inside him, but at the same time is convinced that this is the only way to save this world, secretive always saying what's on his mind enjoying long theatrical speeches, enjoying everything that's theatrical.

Galamouth is the first man that became a God. He gathered a huge amount of spiritual energy and in battle is capable of many twisted tactics, no single God could dream of defeating him” Yahweh replied and looked at the gathered, who stared at him with shock, it was the first time they heard Yahweh's story. Some God's were astonished to find out about Yahweh's childhood, the greatest among light God's was a beggar. This fact shocked many since now Yahweh was the leader of the most powerful Universe spawning state, the eternal metropol, the Megacivilisation as well as the leader of the God's the title he inherited after Galamouth was defeated, the first time he tried to fulfill his mad ambition. The Gods listened carefully, while white clouds were pushed on the blue skies. The almost clear water, gently touched the yellow sands of the beach. The place was peaceful, very natural. The God's escaped the closed reality, they themselves crafted, into something natural. An Unknown world full of beauty and nature, subtle presence that allowed the God's to recharge themselves, after that stressful battle. While Yahweh continued explaining, birds were singing their songs. Communicating with each other, variety of small and bigger birds that swam in the lakes, or the ones that occupied the blue skies, there were also few that dug in the yellow sands. Birds were not the only animals, ear

dropping on the God's conversation, further away few deers were eating grass or slowly, without a care nuzzled the berries of the bush. Life seemed to go with its own peace, without a single care despite these troubled times. In the waters numerous of gold, blue or silver fishes found shelter, thought some of them became a pray for some birds that knew how to take them out from the water, without drawing themselves. Despite these fishes keeping in tight groups, these groups were easily divided by the birds that captured single fishes, none of the other fishes in the group bothered to rescue the captured ones, to try and jump out from the water, to scare the birds into dropping the captured ones into the water. The other fishes simply cowardly run away dividing the group, leaving the captured ones, to their doom. This is how all societies work. Like these fishes the group will always abandon the individuals to their doom. These are truths that are taught by nature itself, these that say that societies are constructed for benefit of all, are liars. No one is protected by a group, the group streanght is just a streanght of cowards, these that can run away will run away leaving the weaker to be killed. This is nature. Just like in the case of these fishes being in a group doesn't make it easier for them to survive, it makes it easier for the predator to spot them and pick the most tasty dish for themselves. Societies and institutions are slaughter houses, where you gather individuals making them play a farse and let the true predators choose, whom they want to abuse and destroy. That is the role of the society to destroy the individuals, oppress and enslave. Mock abuse, oppress and destroy, humiliate and to create pain to feed the always hungry whores of the system, and the structure they created, the structure that created them. The Structure that binds them to slavery and destroys them as well. The structure that fears them, cause their loyal to it, and therefore punishes its best servants. The System doesn't trust even its subordinates. Cause the system being just a structure, detests all life. The System fears live, cause it has the ability to create. While this structure main purpose is to destroy, until their's nothing to destroy and it itself will be destroyed. That's why anyone helping the system is immediately its enemy, anyone trying to help others is a criminal, under its laws there is no justice just the punishment, which has to be severe and humiliating even for a very slight hint of defiance. Even laughing from the whores of the System is forbidden, cause laughter is pleasant and shows that others aren't afraid of it, that's why these that dare to laugh from the mighty must be killed. These are also the reasons Galamouth wanted war, however little he was aware of it, System is like a virus recreates itself in all conditions. If the individuals themselves are strong, the system is just a mad dog employed to guard them from danger if they're weak, the beast starts consuming them. In my original world the second one was the case. Earth was slowly consumed by the System and would be destroyed. This place was however peaceful and the sun shined warmly on the God's who discussed, Yahweh's relationship with Galamouth. "where is peace and silence there is also a promise to war" said the Goddess with silver hair. "will you be able to fight against the one who gave you a chance to live? He, even thought that may do evil things now, he was the one who laid his hand to you when nobody else did, are you strong enough to be against him? And looking back in your story we still didn't learn what made you a god, and what made you to leave Galamouth ..." The Goddess with silver hair looked straightway to Yahweh and then to the other gods and saw that she spoke out everyone's mind. "so, Yahweh, please continue"..The God's observed the situation calmly as Yahweh, took few breaths. The Old man who was turned into a God, was simply too humble to trouble the God's with his own past. He felt like a nuisance

at that moment, but slowly gazed upon the gathered God's and continued his story „That is true Lord Galamouth was the only one who extended his hand towards me....despite the fact he was ,what most of you and others would say a monstriosity....Its a very good question actually, how hopeless mine existence was.... Im ashamed of this, but I do admire my lord's determinaton...his determination to change the world. Correcting all of this evil....but as many of you I cannot agree with the methods he uses,Lord Galamouth wrongly assesest things...believing that only total destruction could free us from pain, no, salvation as you know lies in creation not destruction....I hope he will understand that our role as God's is to create mixing elemental life force's and universal energies....That is our true purpose this is what our God true master of creation wishes for.... The one who opened my eyes to the truth, and entered me into this path of what you call , Goddliness...I never considered my self as a God. Im just a human who's allowed to exist for eternity, just a keeper of the eternal fire....Calling my self a God would be an arrogance my dear brothers and sisters...while were called that by our fellow human and other mortal breatheen were not God's ,just ones created to follow God's plan... yes the one to direct me into the path was the Mad Lord...because of him I could interact with the spiritual and see things ,that changed my fate forever. My fate as I mentioned was of no concern to the other human...for them, me and many childrens were just trash...a waste product of our war torn reality. My Lord's madness was a creation of war as well...he was shaped by the events called as the partitions of Poland and the country's occupation, by the three Empires....the three dark eagles. My Lord was a person adopted into this reality, from a proud race of people known as the Mongolian Tatars....who used to wage wars against Poland and later become the survents and adopted citizens of the very nation they fought against. Due to the fact that theire empire fallen with time....With time the adopted people too were given privelages and became Poles...as Publically only Citizens of Poland could hold authority in the country...Tatars were recognized as beeing Polish and thanks to that were allowed to practice theire muslim religion,in a country that was rulled by Roman Catolicism. Few generations later my Lord was bom into the country, that already lost its independence....and was employed in the service of the adopted homeland...in its strifes for freedom....Helping to maintain integrity in Poland's time of need...Fighting armed battless against opression and living his normal life that was forever shattered by that tragedy” Yahweh finished silently looking at the young Goddess with silver hair. Smiling and cheerfully asked the Goddess a question that was residing in his mind „Forgive me my sudden question ..but have you told us you're name yet? .....I don't remember hearing it ...I don't want to intrude upon you're privacy my lady...cause I could peek in you're thoughts and find out” Yahweh teasingly replied , avoiding the topic. But also beeing curious of the goddess identity. Belzebub smirked „ah Yahweh always changing the subject aren't we..never getting to the important things...forgive him my lady ,but as far as I knew him he was always a scatter head” Belzebub intruded trying to explain Yahweh, also a bit mocking him and trying to remember himself what was it, that made them God's in the first place. „its almost un-belieavable that someone like him rulles the entire Megacivilisation..just proves what money and a lot of team work can do” Belzebub added and looked at Yahweh ,smirking evilly thinking how money was influential. Looking at Yahweh with suspicious eyes , the Goddess with silver hair said : "u may read my thoughts yet u wont find an answer , I have lost my brother and my name as well , from that time on didn't had a name , if you want , you may give me a name " She looked at the sky and

breath , then move her eyes on Yahweh . " Now , continue , we wont let u to finish when u only reached half of ur story . Tell us what u hide , or we will look inside of ur memories by ourselves ... Yahweh ". The Goddess expressed , threatening Yahweh a bit as he looked away and smiled ,, you definetly know , how to get what you want...you really don't intend to let me hide it anymore...but that dosen't mean I wanna tell you just now....no, the truth is I dunno how to tell this story....when we discovered the full scale of our Lord's madness, we formed an informal alliance between light and dark God's,creating the 666 organization, naming it after the mythicall number of the devil, and after that year in which I meet the Mad Lord.The purpose of our meeting is to reactivate this long forgotten alliance,some of the younger God's might never heard of this long forgotten story,but in the distant past we fought this war already...since most of you were born after these events, its only natural that you don't know ....whom I really am. I am Yahweh Lord's Galamouth desciple and one of his survents,everything you see around you, was both analised and created by Lord Galamouth, Megacivilisation is a universe spawning, industrial metropoly like ,cosmic base set in the material world , which original purpose was to gather massive spiritual energy, that could be used in developing magical plains.Most of these magical inginiery used by the mad lord, and whats more shamefull even these weapons that were used against you were developed by me. All existence needs two plains of existence, the spiritual and the material, Megacivilisation is an industrial achievement that combines these two, uniting and enchancing everybodies abilities to its full potential in both planes...On the surface Megacivilisation acts as a huge universe fulling ,metropoly that expands itself covering all known solar systems and entire galaxies, joining all worlds into a federation, rulled bythe Govermental body which I lead,it contains, buisness,economy, cultural centers ,religions centers, homing, shopping ...everything necessary for the modern society to work,play and reside in,that's because Megacivilisation is a universe spawning spiritual tool ..made to control entire societies and harvest spiritual energy from them, or to manipulate dimension and even distort it. We made it to mirror a futuristic almost utopian metropoly,allowing us to mix both light and darkness by using humans and enducing them with contradistic qualities that would be fueled by the enormous , shape of the metropoly, its enought to make them see entire galaxies from their windows,the fact its a world always induced in darkness in the center of the cosmos and the clearly visble manifestation of human technology, which we made sure were seen and acpted by al,these combined contradictions ,allow us to gather energy by fuelling humans with emotions ranging from passion to panic, in the world we created we made sure everything is possible to its full extent allowing us to gather the most energy from a single beeing,now just think what could be done with this energy....We divide this energy equally using it to fuel these that might feel weak, ensuring the miracles happens in each lifes ,whether their small or enormous things, with spiritual energy we harvest everything is possible..we can even return you're world to the way it was before Galamouth intefered with it...we use this energy to create and enchance creation, adding it to the power God already has empowering him with it... However this same energy can be turned into a destructive distortion force ..if not handled properly thats why we ensured that only God himself has full access to it, and he is the one that divides the spoils equally among all...Galamouth aim's to take charge of this energy by denying God his rights , and than he will use it to susspen all existence to destroy everything that was created. To return the world into the state of nothingness" Yahweh answered looking into the Silver



haired Goddess eyes. „of course we made some defence locks to that power, however knowing our Mad Lord he will find a way to by pass them...God operates on our own will..therefore he was given this authority..however because of this it may Allow Galamouth's plan to come into fruition...so we need to move one step further...we need to change our lord's ambition into something less dangerous, once its done he will return to our ranks...Luckily if we have a bigger ambition to protect the world and unite ourselves in true manner The God will work on our will instead of his...this is our only hope so we must believe in ourselves.. God has always been full of surprises...there is one in the battlefield who will stand and lead the way even though he too was once a human...the world needs fools...but sometimes its the fools who are the smartest one , remember that” Yahweh added looking into the sky, smiling because in his eyes it was the most divine sight."So you plan to change Galamouth way of thinking in order to end the war he started ... Are we that weak against him ? Being his disciple , don't u know any weakness of his ? And I'm aware of the power of fools ...". Zavebe laughed and mockingly looked at yahweh „Yahweh is the weakest among us, because of his foolish emotions” Zavebe ridiculed Yahweh but was hit in the head ,by Bezebub's walking stick as he angrily looked at his disciple „don't you dare insult my friend in front of me ...if we can do that than this will prove our strength....its the weak who consider this strategy a weakness. Think about it in order to control someone ..you must have more power than he does...besides this isn't a typical war.Haven't you been paying attention my lady...but Yahweh you of all people know how impossible this is ? don't be a fool , miracles don't happen by themselves, its we who create them...we have nothing to offer to him,he's not interested in money, renounced his faith,doesn't belong to any communities ,obeys no laws, forsaken the pleasures of the flesh,doesn't follow logic,there is nothing we Gods can offer to restrain his main desire, nothing to use as a tool to divert his interests ,the only option...we must seal him. His only weakness lies within his obsession with his ambition, we must ensure that he won't see our movements, he is blind to our power and thats how we can defeat him” Bezebub expressed and looked at troubled Yahweh.Being teased by Bezebub's words , the young Goddess tell to him : "Bezebub , I paid attention , yet it doesn't make a sense to me why Galamouth is so strong ... why he want to destroy mortals ... and what will he do after he destroy everything ... in my eyes he's acting like a spoiled brat who didn't get what he wanted and now is angry . And this so named war , it doesn't seem a war to me . . . " The young Goddess looked to her bracelet sadly and said " my beloved brother used to say <nothing dies , everything's transforming > , don't u think that this is Galamouth intention ... to make this world his empire . As u already said Yahweh, he craves for nothing and desire for nothing ". Yahweh looked at her and answered „yet there was a time he desired a woman...” he stopped and looked back at her."a woman ...Yes , a mortal desire . Then , Yahweh , why don't u try to describe her or at last why was she desired by Galamouth" ..She asked. Yahweh stood up and gently walked to the Ice goddess „they say she looked like a Goddess....her name was Emilia Platter a captain of Polish armed forces, born 1806 Earth's time ,death 1831 Earth time in the place called Justynianka... A Polish countess, Intelligent with powerful charisma with an truly angelic voice....Galamouth mentioned that it was her singing that he loved the most in her. At that time he was known as Dal-Iwin a baron of Tatar ancestry, employed as the captain ingénieur in the Polish forces. The both shared a very passionate romance based on Galamouth's own descriptions,I can't say how much of it was truth and how much he idealised it himself. He was introduced to her by

her brother, She was drawn to him because of his escentrick behaviour, which made the young Dal-Iwin unique among the rest of the Polish nobility, and these were the times where escentricity and romantism were valued ....adleast she obviously valued these traits as she felt that Dal-Iwin was the only one that could understand her passion for the nation, she could also be described as the voice of reason in Galamouth's life. Emilia hold passion for history and Polish culture, which acompanied with Galamouth's love of everything theatricall, and opericall . would give an interesting mixture ,Emilia loved Glamouth's bouldness in preaching his megalomaniacall idea's ,while Galamouth enjoyed her singing and obviously reacted strongly on the positive feelings of belonging somewhere that she gived him, and the ability to control his narcistic behaviours ...which I must admit might as well be a clever invented ruse, as the Mad Lord never shown to be obsessed with power to the point of loosing himself, or this might as well be caused by the ambition he wishe's to acomplish..his megalomania seems to maifest itself in his escentrick behaviour towards people, but not to the point of beeing offensive ...perhaps she understood the reasons of such behaviour as resulting from the fact that Galamouth was born as a member of once proud nation which glory was dimished over the centuries. Hence he felt that he needs to prove to the Poles the pride and glory of the Tatars as reliable and influential allies in the Polish cause...whatever the reason Emilia was an exceptional polish woman, that could accept Galamouth as he was and perhaps they both were destined to live happilly ever after if not for her death in 1831... a death that he witnessed , after caring for her well beeing a death he felt he should prevent , but was unable to" Yahweh explained looking at the Goddess. The Goddess showed to Yahweh her cold eyes , and said : " Where is love there is always something to lose , Galamouth knew that , so losing her it may his fault as I understand from ur words . U still haven't give me an answer , was he troubled by her death ? I don't ask because that would help us a lure him , i ask because I want to know if he had humanity in himself ... " She looked at Bezebub and said : " I have no reason to help u to lure him , or to help in battle , my powers are halved when I stay here or on the Earth , u need humans to believe in u , i don't , i'm staying here because i find u all enjoyable to watch . Whatever Galamouth wants , I don't care . " Piece by piece the throne of ice of the young Goddess was melting . Cold and calm the goddess said : " Continue ur story Yahweh , at last finish what u started ". Belzebub smirked and looked at her walking pushing Yahweh out of his way „before my friend can do that...I wish you clarified you're intentions....Matrimona Del System , you're phony apperance dosen't full us...you're also his acomplce" Belzebub clarified observing the young Goddess ,who continued to look at them coldly . "I ? his accomplice ? I think u made a bad joke Belzebub . " said angry the silver haired Goddess . Her cold eyes became evil and the atmosphere around her changed . She looked at the other Gods and said . "U said right only one thing : I am Matrimona Del System . I did not thought that I'll fool u or the other gods , yet I see that they are more than surprised hearing ur words Belzebub . Those foolish Gods don't know anything . Useless Gods , they will be destroyed first by my anger . I'll get rid of u all , or maybe I should let Yahweh alive , to see how the end of world feels . " The etemal virgin sat on the grass, observing the scene a bit annoyed, at the young silver haired goddess, correcting her hair, and glancing on the Medusa head embedded in her shield. Smiling Athena roose up from the place she sat on, elegently walking towards, Yahweh and the two other God's standing behind Yahweh, hugging the old man from behind. „what a foolish desire" she remarked looking at the gathered Gods, smiling as she let Yahweh go

standing in front of the Goddess, with her tomboyish and always self confident attitude, looking straightly into Matrimona's eyes. „ We the acients God's are shaped by this reality, we won't be able to destroy it " Athena answered the question that was in everybody heads. Seeing Athena's confidence , Matrimona felt annoyed and said with a grave tone : "Don't you think before you talk ? You will always need of mortals to believe in you , once they will vanish , u will slowly lose you powers and vanish ". She looked then at Yahweh with her cold eyes and said : " Mortals will always be mortals , and will have carnal desire , even you Yahweh , you toyed by a woman , how foolish . Even the madness is more powerful than love . I pity you , you don't know how true love feels yet you act like you have the greatest knowledge . U'r inferior to Galamouth ". Yahweh looked sadly into the skies, knowing that what the evil Goddess said was true, he never knew passion, or joy, instead beeing just a bookwom. He didn't know anything about bounds, yet many times was forced to advise others on the meaning of love. He analised and studied many treaties on love, yet never felt any desire, he wasn't even desired by any woman back in the times of his youth, and now appeared like an old man. Who was seen by others as a more parental, or patriarchal figure than an object of an desire. Athena walked back to Yahweh and hugged him once more, for this reason exactly, she admired this man. „That is true..Lord Galamouth is superior to me in this sense, he felt love. But I always had questions about this, is feeling love good to us, are we God's even entitled to operate under these influence, feelings often corrupt our judgment, how many wars were fought because of these desires. I always tried to follow the path of knowledge rather than a path of love, for from knowledge comes well beeing, while love can also bring dissaster if not controlled...Passion is the enemy of wisdom" Said Yahweh ending his speech, hoping that this clarified some things „beeing the arbiter between God's I have no right to choose favourites, or to fall in love...I have to make the right choises for both of us and humanity even if they're not popular, that is the position I was given in this world" Yahweh explained. Disturbed by Yahweh , Matrimona looked at him with pitiful eyes "mortal people have aphrase <<As long as we live we're learning >> . U , Yahweh, aren't suited to be the arbiter ...". She looked at the crescendo from her necklace and said with a sad tone " As a leader you have to feel both joy and disaster , both love and hate , and you must learn from mistakes , there is no God without defects , in other word there is no perfect God . Yahweh , you were chosen to be the ruler of both those world yet you don't know anything . Admits you'r afraid that you'll do a mistake ." Matrimona looked at Athena , changing her calm eyes with disdainful eyes " Athena your weak , those who are weak always stand by those who seem to them as being strong . Soon you'll see where your strong and fake slave Yahweh , will lead you and the others . Remember , everything that was once born will once die too , that's the rule of all the world ". Athena smiled and looked at Matrimona with her confidence „We didnt choose Yahweh to be our leader because he was strong, Its because Yahweh is the weakest among us, that he fulfills the role perfectly, don't expect to understand this" Athena admitted and continued to tease her elegantly. „but you underistimate everybody" she replied looking at Matrimona „even Galamouth" she added. "I do what others have done to me , I don't expect you Athena to understand either " replied Matrimona. Making Athena look at her , with pity „my now...this is exactly why I believe Yahweh is best suited to be our leader, we Gods cannot act on such trivial impulses like emotions " She replied confidently mocking Matrimona. "Oh really ? Earlier some Gods complained that their feeling lonely . Do you think that intelligence can surpass the most primordial feelings ?

Don't act like you'd know everything . Listen before you talk , learn before you act , otherwise , you'll turn into dust .. huh I wonder why would I even care . You all a bunch of idiots . Raised in perfection's illusions , you will never be able to reach the true perfection . Never ! " Angry Matrimona looked at Yahweh with pitiful eyes , tried to say something , but stopped before any word came out . She didn't want to continue a useless chat , with a useless issue . Her true reasons who made her go all the way till the Eden's corner of Gods weren't with mercy for the others , she wanted to destroy every piece of the world and die after , in the hope that she will come on more time , by her brother, Arthemis. Athena smiled and looked with superiority, oblivious to the fact that Matrimona could have been right. „thats why I said it's good that Yahweh is our leader” She explained. Athena disliked God's who were corrupted by their emotions,she took it very personally and tried to prove that wisdom is more important than love „God's who become corrupted by these emotions,don't deserve to be one of us,were not mortals to be confined in such chains. Think of it for a while ...we decide about many great things, tasked by our creator to gather spiritual energy. We mustn't allow ourselves to be influenced by these little and pathetic states of mind. Do you atleast try to understand , how much unnecessary commotion your actions have caused Matrimona!!! ?” Athena replied looking and shouting angrily at the silver haired Goddess."I lived longer than you did Athena . I used to consider everything's and everyone's feelings , but I reached the limit of it . How would you feel if you'd be treated with hate and anger by every being , how would you feel if you would be forced to stay in death's chains in order to avoid a useless conflict . Athena emotions are everything . We were born from emotions , so we must live in and with emotions . I don't expect you to understand . U or any other god . I got tired by ur foolish speech . If you have something worth to say , then say . If you don't shut your mouth forever " . Athena with whole her wisdom looked at the silver haired goddess with pity,she didn't even try to understand Matrimona, because she was the great Athena,a proud Greek goddess that would follow only her own reason. Actually Athena didn't care about Matrimona's feelings, she just didn't want to listen to the God's who claimed that an inferior feeling , might be more important than billion, eons of years worth of knowledge. „God's should learn to control their emotions” She hesitantly looked at the God's and returned to her place. Lilith was smiling looking at the God's knowing that Athena, was the last person that would know anything about it. The Dark Queen sat silently,permitting herself more time to analyse the situation, The wife of Adam was older than Athena, who was just a childish goddess. „whatever they say...The gods born from light shouldn't even claim they understand the feelings of us born in darkness...Athena ,you're just a child that was born from your father's head, don't be a pain in the neck honey” Lilith replied smirking seductively.Sitting on her ice throne , Matrimona looked at both gods of light and dark . She thought why this world must be divided and can't be one . Why do we have to exist in darkness and light , and can't be something that could combine them both . Why do we exist in evil and good , why can't there be only one thing that could keep a balance forever . troubled she bowed a bit her head . She didn't want to look at anything . She wanted everything to be gone , hoping that after everything will disappear a new perfect world will be born . . .The same wishes that Galamouth had, but she couldn't understand, that her dream was impossible to accomplish. Reality as it's known could be compared to a shared dream,and because there always could be someone opposing the end of the world. It was impossible to destroy it.Only one being could put a thorn in this ambition. Thats why it's more effective to just simply accept the things as they

are ,and than simply create you're own world, which will grow and become reality. Dimensions are like seeds, which a farmer plants on the field, they require constanst care, sprouting from a single idea,tying itself with other probalities, nourishing itself,slowly growing. Just like water is used to feed and grow the plants, Culture is used to feed and create new worlds, by developing idea's for a book, we unknowingly comnconcentrate our energy on it, the more we concentrate, the more we create. Matrimona Del System was created in this manner also, she was born from all the corrupted idea's, that came out from that greedy structure, from the system. But unfortunately she started to develope emotions,while still beeing forced to play the role,for which she was born. To be the evil Goddess that punishes people and other mortals in the name of the decayed Structure, since she started to rebell a bit, the system punished her using humans. Thats why she detested them and joined her forces with Galamouth.Zamolxis , a human being who also became a god . Zamolxis behavior was always as a deity ones . He wanted to drink pure water from the bigger mountain and the most tasty and expensive food . Because he believed that he was made to be a god , yet didn't became one , at the age of 22 made up his death and tricked everyone . After feew days he came "back to life" and the villages around the place thought that is was a miraacle and he really became a real god . Next year a tough drought came and people asked Zamolxis to made a miracle and make rain . Scared of being exposed he locked himself in his room and during the night he parayed about his mistakes . When the sun rised God stretched to him His hand and made Zamolxis a god of hope . The other gods chatted, and laughted not paying attention to the conversation that took place. This debate of ancient gods, didn't resemble any formal meetings. Just as if the Gods were having a picnic on these fields of Eden.Eden was once a beautifull garden,a mini world crafted for the very first mortals. The original God's plan was to construct an endosed material reality,a literal garden from which spirital energy could be harvested. However soon it became obvious that material beeings are more complex than envisioned and in order to fulfill theire full potential a more complex reality had to be createn, mortals were tasked with this enormous work, unknowingly theire efforts are to create the perfect reality , so that theire spiritual energy could be harvested and put to use in the great creation scheme.In Zamolxis left , was Amun Ra , a beautiful Goddess , who was shining like the Sun . She was the most important deity for Egypt . There was a time when her name changed for Amun Ra to Aton , yet when the young Tutankamon/Tutankaton came on throne , the cult came back to Amun Ra . Her legendary existence began when a young child named Amun found a weary bird . He took the bird at home and took care of her . One day the child get sick and died . Because no-one could take care of the bird the parents of the child set her free , yet the the bird flew at the place where the child was buried and stood there up until she died . Few days later it was a eclipse and all the lands were surrounded by darkness except the place where the bird was . The villagers gone to the lighted place and saw a miracle , the bird became a beautiful girl , a Goddess , they named her Amun Ra , the one who came from sun's rays. Another interesting God that was sitting in the crowd, was Thor, a warrior god of the vikins,born in the harsh winds of a very cold winter.In the far away scandinavia,born from the heavinly Aesir dynasty. A politicall and military influential one. Theire home was the mythicall Asgard.He was the son of a very cunning God known as Odin,like Zeus Thor was able to control thunder, he was also known because of his trademark weapon known as Mjolner ,whih basically was a very giant hammer, he was dressed in red nordic attire that was decorated with golden ornaments,on his face a huge red beard, and on his head

a traditional viking helmet. Thor looked carefully at the gathered god's , keeping an eye on his own enemies. Yahweh was standing in front of the silver Goddess, once being a man, now a high priest and a leader of Megacivilisation, a God of fire and one of the most enigmaticall figures in the universe, Belzebub was once known as Bal and later as Bal-Zebow, but started using Belzebub as his name after that misspelling became popular,he was always a very greedy person, being born in luxury. Belzebub believed that money is the ultimate form of perfection, and these that are born in luxury are better than the ones born in poverty. Zavebe's past remains a mystery, but somewhere in time he became the descipleof the dark lord Belzebub. Athena was a proud Goddess that was born, from Zeus head,she was the goddess of wisdom that befriended one of the tytans called Hecate,the goddess of witchcraft and justice. Lilith was the original wife of Adam, a Goddess created to satisfy Adam,however she rebelled against her fate and was expelled from Eden, she later married the Dark God Samael and continues to engade sexually with many partners.On Matrimona's left was sitting a quiet and beautiful god , named Quetzalcoatl. He and his throne of gold were sparkling like the Sun. His blonde long hair and big blue eyes were shining bright and a peacefull atmosphere was coming from his mysterious smile . He was also a man who became a god . In the 1st ceturies , when America wasn't knew as she would exist , the Aztec civilization was promoting the cult of Quetzalcoatl. When he was just three he was taked by a priest from the central temple and raised there. He did not know the feeling of a matern or patern love . He was transformed into a perfect men , and then into a god . The God that gives life and purity. Because it was said that Quetzalcoatl itself was born by a virgin mother , he was pure. Watching calm the quarrel between Matrimona and the other gods he felt out of place . But he felt something strange coming from Matrimona . It wasn't the feeling of hate or revenge , it was something more than that .it was something else she wanted . tring to understand more about her he tried to sneak subtle into her thoughts while she was still arguing with Yahweh and Belzebub. He couldn't even get into her mind and she realized his presence .She turned to him and said annoyed" If u are that wide why don't you try to find the answer of your questions by yourself . Don't steal what is not yours." Hearing the wise words of Matrimona Quetzalcoatl felt ashamed , but more than that he felt that all his thoughts were pointless , she was already in his mind and maybe in each god mind . Trying to get back on his feet he tried to say something yet when he looked in Matrimona's eyes he say that she knew what he wanted to say . With a sad look in his eyes , looked at her one more time and said , "why did u had to be like this , if u are so wide, what changed your beauty in anger..." then he looked at the sky and a small tear fallen on his cheek . Yahweh observed the young man, wondering was this love. He looked at the other God's and smiled. „yes its a good thing others can feel it...even if I don't understand it my self the world is full of people and God's who love each other,this makes my hearth smile” Yahweh looked at Athena, who looked at him a bit annoyed, feeling a bit betrayed by his words. „what are you looking at? Was I not human? was I unable love ? Athena love isn't a sin, but its not the place of a philosopher to lecture you about it” Yahweh explained his inability to put his feelings into words.Indeed somewhere deep inside him, he understood love.In Athena's left side a beautiful Goddess started to laugh. She was Venus , The most beautiful Goddess from roman's coult . Clothed sumary , and with many bracelets all over her body , she was indeed a beauty . But even thought of that beauty of hers and the power she had , she was foolish , and always acted before thinking . That is or more exactly was the main reason why the romans changed their religion so

easy to christianity She was looking at the other gods with a high look in her golden eyes . Amused by Athena's acts and words she couldn't help to laugh. Another dangerous Goddess followed suit, the one that glared on the scene ,smirking sinisterly. Her Golden eyes like the eyes of a fox observed the whole situation, that Goddess was Daji, the infamous concubine of emperor Zhou from the Zhang dynasty of ancient China. A Goddess that was once a human, changed into a Fox spirit after her beheading. Dressed in her wonderful seductive and modest white silk robes. With dark or at times red or brightly yellow hair. Smiling and waiting for first blood to fall, she enjoyed cruelty and violence ,while ironically not being to evil. She was one of these mortals that were corrupted by luxury, ironically thought some of her actions ,thought overly cruel have lead to positive developments. Daji was also the first victim, of what we would call a psychological warfare, and while this woman wasn't noble hearted, she could care for these that meet her standards and managed to impress this vixen, and the one that would be able to meet this Goddess criteria ,could honestly consider himself or herself the luckiest one on earth. Cause Daji who herself strived to possess everything, would grant everything to these that she choosed. Thought that didn't make her any different from other Goddesses or Gods who had ,their own favourite mortals, or demonical ,angelic lovers. Which they kept either for amusement , or formed a family like relationship. Still Daji wasn't just anyone to impress, sadistic and cruel, seductive and unfaithful. Only these that were truly strong, could dream of getting near her. Daji loved ironies and only one that didn't want to possess her, could possess her. Relationships are very different, among demons or angels. Than they are with humans, as humans have this un-explained necessity of possessing others. We think that our partners belong only to us, and if our partners make out with others. We understand it as betrayal. Just a word of advice , don't attempt the same with Gods or other immortals. In our world no one belongs to anyone, we cannot forbid our partners to engage sexually with others, cause its something that isn't for us to decide. We are free to love as many as we want. Also age doesn't matter or even the fact that our partners might be our children or relatives. That's cause all Immortals consider themselves a huge family, thought the more younger ones might need time to discover it. Its especially tough to understand for these that were once human, and humans reading this or listening to the story in the audio-book version, might find these words as a shock. This isn't an encouragement to pedophilia, its just one of many differences between the world of humans, and the spirit realm. Demons and Angels engage in sex and other forms of love continuously, as well as praying meditating or spending their times with each other, despite being labeled as enemies. Human understanding of the subject is flawless, Demons and Dark Gods work alongside Angels and God's of light in the hard work of creation. Sustaining the illusion that humans live in order to gather spiritual energy. Of course they treat it as a game, some are arrogant and prudent and cause huge damage as darkness corrupts. Others are loving and caring, understanding and help even these in darkness ,cause as light they understand that without darkness ,there wouldn't be any light. Its an impossible alliance, which is also the cause of Eternal War. Which is fought between siblings who after a huge battle end up , in each other arms as if nothing happened. A bond that couldn't be broken. One that was too precious ,and very fragile. Intense and intoxicating, a very bizarre and complex emotion that wouldn't be understood in anyone's mind. On the Azure sky, an orange sphere was hovering. It was a distant planet , the world of Eden was situated in a very complex, planetary structure, like a egg surrounded by

other eggs ,that created a sphere...or more exactly a ring. Protecting this distant and ancient place. Bestowing it with ancient glory, this beautiful world was once a garden,destined to be the incubator of human will. But humans proved to be more complex beings,requiring stimulation on different level in order to produce the energy, which the will of the universe God desired and needed to create more complex structure. In order for something to exist it must be acknowledged by atleast two other beings,who will then add something to the structure and make it materialize in a more real shape,that is seen by others. This is why mortals exist and this is why they were given the power to subconsciously shape their own reality,which then becomes a reality. This is exactly what the term, of free will means. God doesn't control humans,there is no impositions, no laws, no orders instead humans create their own orders...they have even defined God.Who was a being that didn't have a definition, and thanks to Humans GOD started to exist, The God that created the humans,started to exist thanks to them. Paradoxical circle of creation,but that's not a paradox...it simply means God became aware of its function, thanks to mortals. That's why humans are precious to it. Because without them it was nothing,it was lonely...thanks to them it's no longer lonely interacting with humans and other mortal species on different levels,understanding more as we understand more. Gathering and distributing everything,everywhere equally.The law of the universe, the law of karma. The spiritual energy that is produced by everyone was accessible to anyone,but specific conditions need to be fulfilled. One must accept and open oneself to these influences, only then this power can be used.System however limits our openness to God, and makes us unable to use spiritual powers, makes us afraid of this power...because it's the only power that can defeat the System's influence on mortals. The spiritual power can set us free, but this freedom is not readily acceptable to everyone,because of the lies of the system whores. The system whores are fighting God and the spiritual realm,trying to block our connection to it. This is a war that is waged constantly,this is the true ETERNAL WAR. We should look inside ourselves for this power, naturally not all can use this power. In the world there are different types of personalities in mortals. Depending on civilisations this is described in a different way, for example I used the mathematical description + for Extroverts and - for introverts. This energy that is gathered, can be used by introverts in a more powerful manner than Extroverts. This is a hidden function of the Introverted personality,a more powerful personality carries a more intense soul, therefore making Introverts the true masters of the spiritual realm. That's why this knowledge,will be comprehended by introverts more easily than by extroverts.That's why Extroverts are given possessions in material world, are allowed to be more popular and louder. This is equality,cause we have true authority over all creation. Of course the System uses extroverts to destroy introverts in its attempt to create,slaves for itself.. it harms both Extroverts and Introverts and that's why, the outcasts another our name for Introverts ,although there are some Extroverts in our Introverted society,that's why Outcasts should also protect these that live inside the system, before they will harm themselves or get used by the greedy whores of the system. Of course it's true that some Extroverts understand this truth,it is also true some Introverts have betrayed our mission and oppose the Introverted culture, helping the System whores to suppress us, or like Barack Obama and other high entities,remain quiet fearing that their Introversion will make them lose their position. This is a mistake fellow Introverts, for God has employed us to fight a war against all forms of oppression. Introversion is not a disease it's a special ability that allows us to



govern spiritual energy and send it in the forms of our choosing to our fellow Extroverted brethren, although they might be hostile or even our enemies, they too need our help. It's our duty to forgive and reach out for these that need our assistance. This is how our Introverted world should look like. Mr President of the United States of America, you have been given this power on earth to help us Introverts grow in power, and to establish a culture of love and knowledge that will lead towards GOD. Wake up! Forsake these petty political campaigns and use power and authority, to where it is necessary, go against the greedy whores of the system, and distribute FREE INTERNET CULTURE by official means. People need to unite and create, this is especially true for the Introverts. That's why it's essential.. for introverts to learn to organize. Introverts that were shunned by the society, need to create their own society, that will oppose the system whores. The System fears this idea, because when Introverts organize justice comes alongside. The Whores of the system will be punished for their crimes, and the structure thwarted, crippled and put back into servitude. For the system is just a tool. This will be done in God's name, on the orders of the almighty, for the system which is a corrupt political and economic structure, shall not use God as an excuse anymore. Daji the cruel concubine of ancient China was observing Matrimona, smirking and devising a cruel trap for the dark Goddess, which boldly stood up to other God's, not knowing that Matrimona was already preparing the stage for a very powerful battle, summoning help from Galamouth. A confused young dark haired maiden appeared in the garden independently of that, searching for Matrimona. She observed her surroundings as if someone was there with her. She walked around in her red flowing kimono that touches the ground. While flicking her long, dark, hair that reaches to her waist.

She sat down on a bench, sighing.

"How will I face Lady Matrimona, now? It seems like I have lost track of Lord Galamouth." She could witness the convent from afar, seeing Matrimona in the middle of different God's, preparing to fight them. Meanwhile Daji stood up and started walking to face Matrimona, smirking. Evilly looking at the goddess. This female was once a powerful tyrant who was known from being a shrew as a fox, her golden eyes caught a glimpse of Matrimona's face „My my what a rude one you are, standing so rudely in front of us, Daji thinks this little girl doesn't know her place...are you ready to play with little Daji ?" She asked chuckling a bit and looked at the terribly cold face of Matrimona. „ I don't bite" she playfully teased the cold hearted goddess. Looking at the other Gods Matrimona got pissed off and her angelic supposed atmosphere changed to a devil one. She had such cold eyes that would freeze you from one look. Thinking about the words that Daji said she froze Daji and took away some life power, not noticing that a pink dust was surrounding her, while Daji was staring at the goddess confidently „ Daji thinks she's underestimated" she replied, looking at how Matrimona morphed into her true physical appearance, created by millennia's of hate. Meanwhile her little servant observed, the situation from far away. She heard the commotion and out of curiosity, she walked to eavesdrop, not understanding how dangerous the situation was. While all those happened Matrimona couldn't keep her anger down and the Heaven Guardians sent to her eleven chains. In a blink of eye Matrimona was caught in white chains and when she tried to struggle she was badly hurt. Now her beautiful white robe was turning reddish and the Heaven Gate opened. A blonde angel came through them and slapped Matrimona. " Why can't you behave yourself? You hateful creature! I don't understand how you choose to be reborn in Heaven!" He slapped her one more time. When he did that Matrimona saw that the chains

were coming from his hand .While she figure that out , the blonde angel grabbed the chain that was extended around Matrimona's neck and tight him more and more until Matrimona fainted but she didn't fall she was kept still by the chains .In that moment the whole atmosphere changed and the blonde angel froze . The Heaven gate opened once again and from them came a cold breeze with a sweet scent . A presence could be felt yet there was no-one . Of course what Matrimona couldn't take into an account, was that the angel who oppressed her was in fact created by her. Matrimona struggled with her own emotions,which betrayed her and decided to live as a beautiful male angel,who couldn't accept her. The Angel was her own inner side that she abandoned over millenia's. It wouldn't stop oppressing her untill she accepted the truth. Daji smirked knowing this feeling, as she remembered the time, when she too needed to pay for her crimes and fight off her inner demons, at that time she didn't fare better...creating Nuwa and reliving her life trying to destroy her enemies,creating constant alternative universes...until she understood that she failed cause of herself and her own evil ways and once she accepted that...she managed to become the most fearfull Goddess known to man. She eventually fought off Nuwa when she realized that Nuwa was in fact the part of herself that didn't want to commit these atrocities, Daji nevertheless after constant experiments learned to accept her inner side. Eventually deciding to consent to her fate,wedding again the emperorr and simply enjoying herself..finding peace in the repetition which was her punishment...achieving that allowed her to break free from the circle of hate that imprisoned her in the first place. Meanwile Matrimona's survent rushed into the convent, by passing all the Gods. Worried over her mistress well-beeing. The girl looked with terrified and sad face, at the horrible spectacle. The servant was overwhelmed with shock an worry for the Dark Goddess. "Mistress Matrimona!"She cried to the goddess.She was filled with helplessness as she could see that her mistress was being hurt by a suspiciously abusive angel. The yellow haired Angel growled and send flames at the young survent, as Yahweh rushed in front of her, shielding the young girl with his green force field. „my my its a very dangerous place !!" Daji Excited explained, looking both at Yahweh and the girl that stood behind hm, rushing at Yahweh throwing him away and kneeling, at the girl. Looking Straightly into the young survents eyes. „ and who would this little child be ?" she looked back at Matrimona who was squished by the golden chains „this old hagg won't tell...so Ill ask you again little one ..tell us you're name !" Daji commanded as Yahweh holded her arm. „thats enough vixen !.. I command you to leave this child alone !!" Yahweh shouted at Daji , looking calmly at both of them . Daji growled and looked at the old man, showing off her fearfull nature,than calming down and smiling mischievously „but..but Daji wanted to play .. the old hag is booring and mean ignoring Daji..so Daji thought she could play with her child a bit ...Daji means no harm" Daji smiled mischievously and giggled in a very friendly manner, changing her scary expression into a more pleasent one. "M-my name is Yasumi Enma."The little servant said while avoiding eye contact with Yahweh. She knows that it would be disrespectful to look someone with much higher rank and stronger power."Please forgive my insolence..."As she bowed down to say her apology, she can still feel the cold stare of the concubine and the blonde-haired figure, flying around her mistress. Daji went back covering her face with her pink fan,teasingly smiling. „see no harm done" Daji expressed as Belzebug walked over towards them. „ I find it worrying that survents of Galamouth can enter this place so easilly...where is the mad lord anyways" Asked Belzebug looking at Yahweh , who looked at him and answered „Im not too suprised this is

Echelon , everybody can enter... its one of these disadvantages..but gathering all of you otherwise would be impossible" Said Yahweh. „ still its offending that the enemy can ear drop on us anytime he or she wants it Yahweh !!... this puts our plans in serious jeopardy !!" Expressed Zavebe looking angrily at the old man. Yahweh looked concerned at his former subordinate „yes I know...but we should all remember that this battle has already been decided... Galamouth will fail in his ambition, he asks of the impossible... the only thing left to do is to prepare the infrastructure for the massive spiritual dis-charge. Once this is completed we will need to repair the damage to the planes" expressed Yahweh, making Belzebub smile and look at him with a hint of self satisfaction „ you thought of this all well..everything planned to the end" smirked Belzebub and walked in front of the god's „Indeed everything has already been devised the only thing left to us is to enact the bilenia's long procedure !!... this never ending strife between the forces of Light and Darkness ... take you're battle positions and command of all you're outposts again !! lets give them all a spectacle they have been waiting for!!" Belzebub commanded unto the God's who were listening to the Dark Lord. Yahweh looked at the gathered „ to the young ones I remind our main objective is the spiritual energy...and in order to collect it we need to grant them their wish...please give you're best...they want to take part in the final clash between the forces of the light and the dark,take part in the Eternal War...so you all need to make sure that they experience it with all their senses...only then they will produce the energy we need....good luck to you all !" Yahweh looked back at Matrimona „but before that , we will resolve one more matter" Yahweh expressed and looked at the Dark God,engulphed in her pain „dear child everybody needs to face themselves in the end... this is what makes us strong" Yahweh added and looked into the distance.In all of the ruckus that was happening the servant managed to slip away, wondering of why all of these fights must happen. Yahweh observed the little girl as she escaped. „our little spy left us already" sighting and walking over to Matrimona, while the angel attacked him ,he just hit it with his cane „go back to you're true form" Yahweh commanded the spirit, that was created from Matrimona's emotions, making it change into dark smoke and go back into Matrimona ,the golden chains then disappeared freeing the goddess as the darkness,changed back into her humanoid form making her fall into the ground, while Yahweh hit her with his cane that now was engulphed in white light „wake up Matrimona !!" He commanded and looked at her. Suddenly a purple force field pushed Yahweh away from the dark Goddess,while a portal started forming,in front of Matrimona. Arua and Aya come out from that portal. "so its u.." said Arua with no expression on her face. Yahweh looked at the two girls a bit surprised. „ I see you're still alive princesses" Yahweh expressed and looked into Arua's eyes. „you came here on you're masters orders to retrieve this one I believe...but Im surprised that you used a shadow clone instead of you're real self...are you two as that afraid of our power ?" Yahweh expressed and teased the girl a little bit."no. We're not afraid. We don't have to defeat you. We came here just give a message" said shadow clone of Arua calmly, smiling and walking forward as the dark haired Zavebe walked over to Yahweh, making Gabrielle join him. „were listening .." said Yahweh, while Zavebe looked at the girls angrily „This is absurd is he mocking us sending these brats here !!" Zavebe yelled angrily. Making Arua notice his behaviour and walk towards him , "why u angry,Zavebe?" said Arua smiling, standing in front of him. Making Zavebe's insides boil from anger, he couldn't take this kinda insult lightly, for him everything was a grave offense. This was what kinda god he was „How dare you talk to me like that you impudent whore !"

Zavebe screamed angrily „I will kill you !!” he added manifesting his anger. As his eyes shined in red. Zavebe was an angel that used to serve God, being friends with Gabrielle and Michael, but fallen to darkness consumed by his own ignorance, greed, anger, lust and envy. All these feelings took control over him, making him a very shallow and dark existence. He viewed everyone as his mortal enemy and would fight everyone except Belzebub, who as the God of money and greed...shared some of his objectives with him. Therefore he could only stare at the girls with immense hate, he hated everyone. Not because of being harmed, but because of his never fulfilled ego, which only wanted more and more. He wanted to prove his superiority to the girls at once. Making them understand that he's the master of all in the world, which of course was only his delusions that he created for himself. Shadow clone of Aya came closer to Arua "hmm? What will he do, sis?" she said being visibly worried over the situation, as Yahweh looked angrily at Zavebe, having the dark god walk back a bit „ you have no need to fear him...now please let us hear the message” said Yahweh encouraging the girls. "I'm sorry Yahweh. I cannot tell you " Arua walks away and come close to Matrimona. Belzebub laughs and walks behind Zavebe „we must be careful of these little children.... The mad lord is scheming something in secret, it's safe to assume he desires revenge for his imprisonment in Echelon, despite the fact he could realize his ambitions of destroying the world and reality manipulation safely there..what an annoying individual...to think he dares to interfere with serious matters here” Belzebub commented to his servant as Zavebe nodded „foolish being consumed by foolish desires, he will never understand the true force of the darkness...but to think were fighting him together with the God's of light ? it's an offense !” Zavebe yelled, as Belzebub smirked and walked back „Calm down this won't take long, we just need to resolve this matter... in its own right it's a bit sentimental after all think my dear Zavebe such events don't happen often, for these that were divided to gather in a single place and work together...such events are rare we must learn to enjoy them” Belzebub expressed amused and looked at the God's of Light and Darkness gathered in the fields of Eden. Meanwhile Arua walked closer to Matrimona, who was still lying on the green grass unconscious. Arua stands in front of Matrimona "I asking you. Are you Matrimona?" Arua asked her question, noticing that the woman was still unconscious and didn't answer her summons. Arua touched Matrimona "what happened with you Matrimona? wake up" whisper Arua at Matrimona's ear. While Yahweh stared at her slowly „I think it's all right to tell you what happened with your friend here, it seems you're Matrimona couldn't accept her inner darkness, her feelings caused an internal conflict inside her consciousness and as a result all of her vital functions were shut down.. I'm trying to connect to her light side in order to free her from this suffering” Yahweh explained as the other God's observed the situation, with some interest. "ah I see" suddenly Arua uses her magic and tries controlling Matrimona. "let's see" said Arua calmly. While she sends bright energy into the goddess, making a dark smoke come out from her body, Yahweh walks closer being amazed by the girl's spiritual craftship „ you're quite good with this...mind me joining you ? ...you need to strengthen this insignia if you want it to work” Yahweh replied and put his cane on the girl's chest, as green whirlpoolic energies formed pentagrams and symbols started appearing. „now child let's see how good you are, can you read these symbols” Asked Yahweh observing Arua. Meanwhile, the servant fled because she knew that it would be best to leave the place and let the gods talk in peace.

„Lady Matrimona..." she wept, "Forgive me if I could not serve you well enough."

She leaned on a wall inside a small cottage.

"I wish I could do something more than this...!" The girl cried, feeling very weak and useless to their masters. Suffering from being weak, and cursing herself for not being able to do anything, not suspecting that her actions were monitored by Galamouth himself. „ You have done well my child” He spoke to her in her thoughts making her tremble with fear, as she heard the mad lord's voice in her head. „Truly these fools shall suffer my wrath once I finish my ambition...the world shall be turned to ashes and there will be no decay...Matrimona will be taken care of, she is a valuable pawn in my plans, her use has not been exhausted my child ... so rejoice !!your efforts have paid off ...Arua and Aoi will take care of her... but you must return as they're also burdened with Blaze Master.....yes this foolish boy is a nuisance ...but I don't mind spectators ...after all my dear we shall create this as a means of concluding everything !!!” Proclaimed in his madness the Mad Lord, as the girl trembled. Galamouth was enjoying the girl's fear, tasting it as a refined pleasure in his soul. He was a true bringer of all terror. „ can you remind me your name ?” He continued to mock the child, teasing her despite the fact she found herself in a very dangerous situation. Meanwhile Yahweh and Arua, continued their treatment on Matrimona's soul, the girl looked amazed at Yahweh's skills and being troubled by certain images that were appearing. Turning her head towards Yahweh she expressed her concern "what is it? I haven't read any symbol like this. A shadow clone cannot read rare symbols"The Shadow clone Arua replied, as Yahweh glanced the images, of two beings. One being was shown as a female, a fallen angel that was engulfed by dark aura, the other being was shown as male white, engulfed in light, but the male's light started to fade away, making the black female symbol appear closer, she attacked the white male, who became engulfed in darkness and turned into a black monster, then the black female extended strings from her body, that started destroying the monster, making cracks on it, eventually destroying it to pieces, revealing a white male which again shined in beautiful light. While the black female turned into the monster, the symbol of the monster started running away from the symbol of the white male, as it pursued it, the white male captured the monster and hugged it, squishing it a bit, making the monster blow the darkness away, revealing the black female inside, making the white male kiss the female as her color changed from black to light making the darkness fly away. The both symbols were white, and shining in light. Yahweh sighted and looked at the young girl „You see Arua, this means that true love has no boundaries, love conquers all negativity suppressing it and releasing. For these people that know love, darkness itself is not dangerous, instead being a detergent it cleanses them from impurity, by making the light release the darkness and once the darkness is released it then can be confronted and conquered. The energy thus produced returns to the universe, freeing the one that was under its influence and couldn't let go...if only Matrimona knew this and would let go of her darkness, perhaps then she and Galamouth could be saved” Yahweh replied looking into the girl's eyes „but perhaps not all hope is lost little one.. I see in your eyes the light that is necessary for this task my dear” Yahweh replied looking at the Shadow clone. "what do you mean, Yahweh?" asked the shadow clone of Arua. Yahweh looked at the shadow clone, and then at the other gods. Thinking about the young girl that was controlling this shadow puppet, and thinking how it represents this strange reality, he now was a part of it. Yahweh understood that what he saw, was merely a puppet, just like his body itself was also a puppet and the true core, which stored the puppet's personality was

hidden somewhere else, its true soul does not reside in a body its only connected to it. Thats because the true soul has no form or personality, however in order to interact it first needs to create a form for itself, thats why the material world and humanity were created,in order to simplify things ...slowly pushing our cores into creating ,and learning our true nature in the process. This was why The shadow clone Arua and the real Arua were the same, and they both could exist at the same time,though the Shadow clone would die after this event was over, the soul would switch back to the original body,this was again made possible by the illusion of time...it was enough for Arua to close eyes when she and her sister played , to transfer herself to the shadow clone she made...just like in a dream that took only a second. Because by the time when Arua oppened her eyes, winking to me in Galamouth's base , she was already back with her sis from the convent. Yes ! From my perspective they never left me at all...and yet Arua already spend a day or more with the God's . How is this possible the illusion of time , wich is just like a stream in a video site,with different devices ! Arua had these events streamed to her, while for me the only event that was streamed was Arua winking her eyes a bit...perhaps I wouldn't even notice this, haven't Arua told me about it...but returning to the convent Yahweh again looked at the girl and slowly replied „ I meant that there is love inside you,I can see you're true soul...and its a soul full of love” Yahweh replied smiling at the girl."well,you are wrong Yahweh,a piece of my love already dead! You cannot see it then?" shadow clone of Arua smiling with her blue eyes. Making the old man smile and laught like a child „decieving me won't work.. I know its humiliating to have all the contents of you're soul seen, by you're enemy...but I am Yahweh the priest of the gods I know all that resides , in everyone's soul. There's nothing that can be hidden from my eyes,for I have the Lord as my sheppard and he guides me throught,the narrow pathways of darkness inside you're hearth,to the shining glimpse of light that remains....and this is what I can say than.... not all is dead” Yahweh replied, hoping this would make her be a little bit more ohnest.Shadow clone of Arua smiling " and dont forget if Arua can control soul. And why u haven't realise that I'm not a shadow clone? Me and Aya its a fake shadow clone. We made by her emotions." The girl smirked evingly thinking she outwitted , Yahweh himself, while he himself just merelly, played her game. knowing from begining that her true body was somewhere else, and that she merelly used a part of her true self to manifest herself here. Yahweh understood this all ready since he knew that Galamouth needed the girl to perform something,thats why having the real Arua appear in the middle of his enemies meeting, wouldn't really be wise, but having Arua send a part of her essence there,by creating a false vessel in order to spy on the God's was a brilliant Idea,Galamouth used the same technique when appearing in front of the God's earlier...the only difference beeing that he was more experienced, and could create a more stable vessel for himself, givving it as much dark energy he wanted. Sending himself with a body full of dark energy as a living bomb, or just to simply psychologically intimidate an enemy. Forming relations or even bonds, was in fact something that could decide about how the battle itself would be fought. Matrimona howeverlacked , psychologicall stability to control her body, and instead of creating a false vessel to aid the one she already had, she went into battle with her own body, which putted her at dis-advantage as having two bodies improves things in a better way than using just one , just common spiritual strategy... but even thought god's and other spiritual entity's are immorta having their bodies or vessels destroys puts them on dis-advantage however if a false vessels suffers the destruction...a soul can continue within the original one . Yahweh sighted and

pretended to be shocked „ oh no you're telling me you managed to fool my senses !” Yahweh pretended to be shocked, enjoying playing with the young one „ oh my lord how could I be so careless I might have found my self in terrible danger now !” Yahweh replied , playing his part. Wondering what Arua would do now. The God's too were prepared, and instead of going to the meeting in their original bodies , they used the ones specifically design for that. The Bodies that had special personalities in them as well, Each God's ,demons and Angels and every powerfull spirit, has many bodies and personalities placed in different times, and for different purpose. One personalities are meant to be used as a communication tool, other are used for gathering energy, an there are these that are used as weapons. The soul simply switchess between them, and the battle also takes place, to place as many personalities, in as many worlds that is possible and to harvest energy from all these worlds. While the soul switchess between them.By simply gathering experience and enlarging ones presence, creating new realities throught interaction.Arua smiling " oh my,you already know" trying make her face became shock. "and why you think if Arua come here she didn't wise? But if she already in here,what will you do?" Arua replied , meanwhile Yahew grabbed Aoi and took her in his arms „hmm I know how about I kidnap you're little sister...attacking someone close to you're enemy is a good tactic” Yahweh replied teasing Arua as he lift up, Aoi and hold her in his arms. „ you made a mistake coming with you're little sister here, buahaha” Yahweh pretend to act evilly a bit.Suddenly shadow clone of Aya vanished. "well I hate when someone touch a piece of my emotions" there is Arua sounds but she is nowhere "she come" said shadow clone of Arua. Yahweh put Aoi down, while the girl laughed a bit, looking at Arua who vanished. „Im sorry... I should have known better,please forgive me... that was a terrible mistake” Yahweh bowed down, in an apdlogy gesture. „Dear Arua I over stepped my position please forgive my sin” Yahweh expressed looking down. „bowing to you're enemy is pathetic...what a pathetic fool” Expressed Zavebe ,looking with disquist at his former mentor and master, While the golden haired angel Gabrielle, corrected her hair „No you're wrong, apologising is showing respect,only a fool boasts his pride ...sometimes its wiser to lower you're head Zavebe” Expressed Gabrielle commenting upon the actions of her lord. „you're telling me its wise ! to play with an enemy !! ...we should kill her now to show Galamouth were not affraid of him !!” Zavebe yelled arguing his point of view. „Killing is not a sign of courage its a sign of weakness...the only thing we would prove by killing her now, would be our ignorance and fear and of course weakness....its a sign of streanght to offer compassion to the weak...don't be blinded with you're hate Zavebe...there's nothing to fear , Galamouth's evil warrior is just a mere child !!” Gabrielle expressed her wisdom,the Angel waswise and harboured immense experience,she knew that Arua and Aoi were just pawns in Galamouth's hands,and that these two didn't constitute any danger to the god's that gathered. The real Arua come out behind Zavebe and Gabrielle "well who wants killing me so badly?" Arua with no expression watch Zavebe's back. Her eyes is more live than her shadow clone's eyes. Her eyes still can hynoptys. "my shadow clone,go back to my body, I think we cannot give the information". Said the real Arua to her shadow clone. „Gabrielle analise this girl's body !” Yahweh ordered to his survent as the Angel walked back a bit and clapped her hands, egulphing Arua's real body with silver aura „as you command” Gabrielle replied as she had part of her essence, to flow into Arua's true structure,resonating with her molecules,reacting to Arua's own energy systems, by encountering different energy currents in her body, by passing different cels ,engulphing her DNA

structure. „as we suspected her body carries hidden commands ,imbedded in the girls structure . The command seals are imbedded into Arua's soul.. but their purpose will take time to decypher” Gabrielle expressed. „ill gather the whole data and record it in my own spiritual field to continue analis” Gabrielle added as Yahweh nodded. Arua stare at Gabrielle and Yahweh "weird" Arua walk n vanishing her shadow clone. Her shadow clone back to her body. Arua saw Matrimona "..why.?" said Arua with hate expression while see Matrimona. "she is dreaming?". Gabrielle nodded while continuing the analis, whele Yahweh took upon himself to keep the girl in this world untill it was done „yes unfortunetly , thats true....well actually she's simply in her own spiritual realm...we could try to enter there to pull her out..that is if she would let us...force entry might be difficult thought” Yahweh replied and looked at Arua , as she was engulfed in Gabrielle's silver energy, it didn't even hurt Arua making her ignore this fact, simply not understanding that Gabrielle was stealing secret information from her, have she had more experience she would understand why Yahweh was talking to her."then I must kill her!" Arua smiling "Stop analyzing me,Gabrielle! Stop talking with me Yahweh!" Arua take off a black pearl "its all you want? The information?" Arua smiling evilly. Yahweh schocked looked at the pearl „Galamouth is baiting us ? ...I shouldn't be suprised.. so you had this infomation recorded, you see dear information is of great importance in wars...but I rather have Gabrielle continue her analis , than taking that pearl...don't worry dear she will finish shortly” Yahweh looked at Gabrielle as she noded."I hate it when someone analis me!" Arua yelled. Making Yahweh laught „I remember how Galamouth used to analise my body for his experiments,I would always yell the same ...this really is funny , how now Im the one thatanalises...well technically its Gabrielle not me” Yahweh replied as Gabrielle finished it making the silver energy disperse „its done my Lord” Gabrielle replied. "whatever" Arua bite the black pearl and its broken. The information have been deleted. All the information that Gabrielle got from analyze Arua are being deleted by Arua. Arua smiling happily. Gabrielle looked schocked as all her efforts were wasted. Not beeing able to speak, she quietly observed as the information she gathered to further the analyse dissapeared. „of course, I was made a fool again,I should estimated this, Galamouth ensured his secrets remain hidden,in the information stream we copied there was a hidden comand implemented,if the information would be ackquired by the enemy,a special command sequence ,which would be implemented by Arua,would delete the copied information,the pearl she used was a defensive mechanism....in other words copying it is pointless because Arua can delete the copy...the only option remaining is to capture her...but than we must asume, she's able to release herself from this world returning back to Galamouth...this is a tricky event,but sometimes the wisest thing is to do nothing” Yahweh replied and looked at Gabrielle and the other gods,Belzebub walked towards them ,and looked at Arua „ are you sure of this....I believe if we work fast and correctly we would be able to capture her” Belzebub expressed and smiled „it wouldn't be much of a problem,if we want to we must work fast, if she dissapears or swaps places with the shadow clone, this opportunity will dissapear, we have no time to waste” Belzebub expressed, beeing ready to strike the girl „wait .. don't forget each action has its consequence... if we make a wrong move we might get entangled ourselves... Galamouth won't sit back if we block her ...other disturbances may follow” Yahweh expressed and looked at Belzebub „than we could simply restrain her by time, Galamouth wouldn't notice as she would return on schegule...we could also send a spy” Belzebub explained and looked at the girl. „you're underestimating him, if we make a move she will report that to Galamouth..this



will make him change his strategy rendering, the information useless...and if we would use a spy posing as her Galamouth would know, this would also alert him of our actions, he's too experienced for that to work on him" Yahweh replied and looked at Belzebub. „I see so our best option is to do nothing, an unnecessary move would alert him, and her return might be more useful....at least it won't cause disturbances to the flow of events...I must agree this is a wise move" Belzebub expressed and looked at Arua, who was listening to them. „yes even if she were to escape now it is to our benefit" Yahweh expressed. "so you all wanna kidnap me?" Arua smiling. Making Yahweh smile „no not at all" he expressed, as Belzebub nodded „We given up on that useless idea" Belzebub added, while in the meantime, Yasumi came out from her hiding, and bowed down to Arua. The servant goes behind Arua and whispers in her ear. She told everything. Whispering quietly, as Arua looked at her surprised and annoyed a bit. "what do you mean?" ask Arua to the servant, a bit startled, by the things Yasumi told her. While the servant continued with her report "Galamouth is observing everything." Her voice is filled with worry. Making Yahweh whisper to Belzebub „see I told you ...that would cause us troubles" Yahweh expressed to Belzebub, while he angrily looked at the girls „damn the mad lord, he dares to toy with us !!" growled Belzebub and added „but we will make him regret that" Belzebub added as the girls continued their conversation. "he observing everything?" ask Arua "why?" ....Yasumi pulled back and look at Arua. "I don't know either. Maybe it's for Lady Matrimona." Making Arua jealous at these words, as she a bit angrily looked at the servant "why it's always for her?" Arua Stared at Matrimona angrily, waiting for Yasumi to answer her question, the servant shook her head. "I don't know either. But it's worrying me." the girl replied. "Yasumi, tell Galamouth, that I already deleted the information. " said Arua and she stare at Yahweh "then what will you do, Yahweh?". Yahweh looked at her and replied „the wisest thing would be nothing" Yahweh replied „not yet.. but you can assure Lord Galamouth that his ambitions will fail" Yahweh replied and looked at Arua. "oh I see, then I'll disobey Galamouth order" Arua smiling evilly, and suddenly unknown to her, her body was filled with dark energy, as red energy currents appeared on her skin, hurting her terribly, every cell in her body started to produce immense pain, and her skin was ripped gently making blood burst out in a very painful manner „If you betray me I'll crush your soul" Galamouth replied in her head, as the pain stopped and her body was healed. Making everyone gasp in shock a bit and Yahweh went back „ah I see that's how it is" Yahweh replied, and looked disgusted at the cruel method Galamouth was using to control his servants. "hahaha kill me Galamouth! I don't want to obey all your order from now till the end" said Arua without fear. "Why killing you would be such a waste...it's enough to make you suffer...besides who said I gotta kill you..you're not thinking about your little sister and that's very rude my dear" Galamouth replied laughing madly „ah I wonder how she screams when in pain..delicateness of her young body must be something worthwhile !!!" Galamouth explained laughing madly. "well she will survive if her always with Blaze! I prefer die than suffer!" replied Arua. Galamouth smirked „and what if I kill Blaze ?....you honestly think that fool can defeat me and my ambition...think about it.. Blaze is my pawn" Galamouth replied and laughed. „foolish little child" he expressed laughing. "aya..." a teardrop dropping from Arua eyes. "then you will kill her if I betray you?" she asked „what were you thinking child...that you alone have the power to bring dead to live...it was my force that could grant that.. I lend you that power and I can take it away, whenever I want it...Blaze cannot stop it, he'll be helpless when I make my

move, that is because you two belong to me, you are my property that serves my will...now let me hear you say this again..will you or will you not betray me .. my child announce it to the entire world buaahahaha" Galamouth explained and laughed maniacally, in Arua's head."no. You are wrong. Aya didn't belong you. I making her. And she hadn't a bond with you!" Arua screamed out, making Yasumi more frightened , as Galamouth replied in Arua's head „oh really, wanna put that theory to the test ? ... I told you haven't I...I was the one that gived you that power , that you used to make her....because you used that power ,now she has a bound with me observe" Galamouth replied as Aya suddenly started crying, being covered in a very redish energy, which made her vomit blood, Yahweh observed the spectacle horrified „whats going on ? Arua ?" he asked the girl as suddenly a powerfull dark wind bursted out, while Lord Galamouth materialized himself in this dimension, by making dark particles combine themselves very quickly creating a body for him to use, in just a manner of few seconds allowing the Mad Lord to safely interact withing this enclosed reality „ pardon my intrusion, but I seem to have some minor parent work to be done" Galamouth explained as the god's gasped , with a terrified expression „We meet again oh usseless one" Galamouth expressed, making Yahweh look at him angrily „What have you done now .. you fiend!!" Yahweh shouted."Arua....!" Was the only thing Yasumi can say, over the shocking events. Galamouth looked at Yasumi and smiled gently" oh don't worry my dear child..Ill make sure both Arua and Aya die a very painfull death" Galamouth explained in a very calm and warm manner. Gathering all the courage she has left, and also because of desperation, she shouted."Why would you do that to them!? Aren't they your your creations!? And they served you for a long time! How can you just destroy them!?" Anger was filling her heart that time, she couldn't bear seeing another soul be destroyed. Galamouth looked at her amused „ what now you dare to bark back to me .. you bitch !" Galamouth screamed and walked towards Yasumi, hitting her in the face and then punching hardly throwing her on the ground. „What is that all you got ?....and yet you dare to defy my rules !!" he looked with disqust at the child. She could feel the pain, from the punch, and can hardly breathe. But the pain that is inside her hurts even more „ D-damn you...!" she groaned, "You... have no right... to judge me for who.... iam." She slowly stood up. Galamouth smirked and watched her stand up in pain „ and you are what exactly ?" he asked mocking Yasumi. Yahweh annoyed hitted his cane , into the grass creating a light force , that suddenly attacked Galamouth ,making him jump away „ aren't you the bold one..Yahweh interfering when I scold my own pawns...such dis-respect shall be punishable with you're death" Galamouth annouced and suddenly, billion of millions tiny dark spears came out from the skies, hitting and impalling Yahweh, cutting his flesh into pieces , that were then themselves cutted into tiny pieces creating a pile of blood. „look how detestable you look now Yahweh...pull yourself together its such a unsightfull view" he then turned his attention to Yasumi „Ah were was I ..killing the traitor right ?" Galamouth replied to Yasumi, While Yahweg was ,emerging from the pile of flesh, reconstructing his old appearance and sucking up all the blood, to recreate his body. „you'll have to try harder to destroy us" Yahweh replied „ don't worry I shall" Galamouth replied. Yasumi was intently just watching them. While Galamouth moved his hand forward , and geryish serpents started forming from his pawn , jumping out of them. With red eyes growing in dark powers , engulfed in a smoke started flying towards Yasumi, being intercepted by a fire bird that burned the darkness inside its pawn , as two others were sitting near Yasumi and protecting her. Yasumi spoke to herself in her mind "I may not find

any use of myself right now.. But I will soon." staring at both Yahweh and Galamouth , who where engaged in battle, as the Mad lord send red energy lighting at Yahweh ,who defended himself with a blue energy shield. While both Arua and Aya, which started to heal up, were being engulfed in light. Both Yahweh and Galamouth were walking at the opposing end of the circle they created, with Yasumi, Arua and Aya , in the middle of this huge circle. The sky suddenly turned into darkness as blood started falling down like rain , while the darkness itself started to overflow the dimensional structure. The circle became visible shining in green color as all of the girls, were engulfed in a blue sphere, that acted as a shield creating a micro environment to protect them from darkness that was engulfing Eden, an incredible battle was beginning , as the peaceful lake turned into a lake of decaying blood, in which corpses were being visible. Corpses of different kind of people, and not just people but also dead animals filled, the once lively lake as the nearby forests were engulfed in flames, winds howling in an insane manner and red lightnings hitting the ground, setting everything into purple flames. Evil spirits started appearing and instantly attacked the gods, making all of the gods fall into despair, while the light God's tried to establish a barrier to protect the realm, creating a chaotic situation, bright yellow flames were falling from the skies destroying the dark spirits by engulfing them , in these flames instantly purifying them. Galamouth moved his hand forward making all of the darkness he had stored in himself attack Yahweh, who protected himself by engulfing in white flames that burned the darkness, which tried to engulf Yahweh, while Gabrielle used her golden sword to create a powerful surge of light , which she directed to Galamouth trying to engulf him, as he used his shadow birds to create a barrier, sacrificing them as they squealed being burned by the light, and being released from their ordeal. "don't do that please!" Cried Yasumi. While Galamouth , was forcing the angry spirits into the battle, and laughing from pleasure as they were cut down, one by one with Gabrielle's swords. Troubled because of , Yasumi's reaction Arua turned her head "why you crying Yasumi?" She asked the servant. Aya trembling beside Arua "sis..." While Yasumi looked scared "How can we get out...?". She asked looking for an exit from the deadly battle. Galamouth was growling in an inhuman, manner as he slowly was losing himself to his darkness, turning into a true monster. He didn't even look human anymore, appearing in a very grotesque manner, while his tentacles surrounded the sphere, the girls could hear the screams of many souls , inside Galamouth that called for help, to be released from this darkness. Galamouth was being consumed by his own darkness , attacking the sphere and growling like an animal „I will consume your blood !!!" He screamed in a very inhuman manner, while his eyes turned red, as blood was coming out from them, like tears as he was crying in bloody tears, caused by immense pain he himself created, this was the darkness that consumed his soul, the terrible poison that poisoned this harmless visionary, making him a force of destruction. Fear was dominating her that time. But she realized that Matrimona is still in chains.

"Lady Matrimona..." "How will we get her down?" Galamouth looked at her smirking „oh what a pity , its truly cruel to see you in chains my lady" He walked over to Matrimona , being observed carefully by Yahweh, who noticed the darkness surrounding his body „that darkness still captivates you my lord?" Yahweh asked Galamouth, making him turn his attention to the old man, looking at him with disgust „it does not concern you filth" he replied to Yahweh, touching Matrimona's body. Meanwhile Arua stood up, concentrated her spiritual powers , gathering it into her body and suddenly ran through the protective

shields ,leaving the circle Arua run fast to Galamouth and left Aya behind. She kick Galamouth "don't touch her!" she screamed. As Galamouth turned towards her and moved his hand towards her ,stabbing her hearth with a tentacle that sudenly grown from his hand as he growled wildly,Making Yahweh run towards them, and blast him away with an invisible ,forcefield that thrown Galamouth into the ground, while Yahweh run over to Aura, looking at the child and sending his energy to heal her „Are you all right child..that was a brave but also very reckless thing you did there"Yahweh replied"i...I'm ok...it will hit him next time! How dare he stabbed me!" Arua replied to Yahweh While Yasumi shouted "Be careful, Arua!"She called.. Galamouth stood up laughting „what a funny man caring about youre enemies....this is why you shall die, regretting that foolishness" Galamouth replied.Yasumi stayed with Aya, and just stood there, watching the whole scene with horror.

"Lord Galamouth is powerful, but is only consumed with hatred.... From my point of view, his power is a waste."She was mocking him so he would leave Matrimona alone. Galamouth laughted, amused by the girls words „Yes it is true Yasumi.. all of this is a waste, creation itself is just a wasted effort...creating only decay and usseless garbagge ... think of it little girl.. look around at how much pain and suffering is made in the worlds administrated by these gods ... powers gived to these that will abuse others,just because they hold power or money .. ,makes them justified to make judgments about these that were less fortunate , die than with these worthless illussions.. do you find me funny...ah if only I couldbreak you're body into pieces , than you would know.... that its dangerous to mock me and my desires" Galamouth replied looking coldly at Yasumi, walking over to Matrimona „she will die even if I won't touch her" Galamouth ended, making Yahweh look at him „just like you Mad Lord, you're both dying from the same sickness ?"Yahweh replied and asked the question looking at him, as Galamouth looked back at him coldly „yes thats true...were both dying" Galamouth replied looking at the darkness he created „its an eternal death, my immortal body is decaying" Galamouth expressed as he coughed up, some blood making it fall to the ground „this is my decay !" Galamouth shouted."i know,Yasumi!" Arua stare at Galamouth. Look at Galamouth's darkness. "oh,i want eat that darkness!" Galamouth smirked „foolish girl, this isn't a food this a poison... a terrible sickness" Galamouth replied „you asked why I could do such things, with this sickness and ordeal I can only desire death... killing others is not my concern, for I alone cannot die,despite beeing close to death..oh the pain and humiliation" Galamouth expressed."Then why are you accepting it?" Yasumi finally found a bit of courage. Galamouh looked at her question , unable to answer it, realizing that the girls weren't affraid of him. Understanding that he lost this battle, he slowly fade away releasing his soul from the container as the body slowly fade away,the darkness cracked and i itself turned into the darkness, as the garden was restoring itself,with light penetrating the cracks and flowing inside the dimension, like a golden dust purifying the realm. „he escaped" Yahweh replied. Really? But why?" Yasumi asked suprise as the spheres and the circle dissapeared „uh,I really want to eat it!.. it can be my new spirit" Arua still desire to eat Galamouth darkness,smiling.. while Yahweh looked at her „Darkness is a force that destroys, such spirit would never let you control itself.. it would desire only to destroy you.. Galamouth thought as you do, that he could take everyone's darkness inside him and control it...but instead the darkness took control of him, desiring his anihilation...Yasumi you defeated him by pointing this out...he accepted that causehe's affraid" Yahweh replied. As the sun started shining, while the darkness gathered into dark coulds slowly, only to

disappear, as the environment started to reborn."because if i can eat half of his soul,he can change. And also his soul can kill me" Arua smiling „you want to die ?  
" Yahweh asked surprised „ now why would you want that ?" He continued with his question"i want to die to end all of this. Because 'it' Careless,heartless,m-indless. No one care about me" Said Arua. Arua word really weird. "sis..." Aya stare at Arua. She know what Arua means. Yahweh stared at her, and answered „you're wrong Child...there's many people who care for you, you can start by Galamouth himself..you're little sister, the girl over there Yasumi, my self and of course Blaze ...actually I could go on indefinitely...darkness wouldn't kill you, its just would be eternal pain, its like that stabbing Galamouth gived you only the wound ,wouldn't ever heal... you have it inside you already thats why you're sad for him" Yahweh replied looking sadly at Arua .Arua keep silent,thinking what Yahweh tell to her. She ignored what happen with her "no. Galamouth didn't care about me. He just using me!" Arua replied screaming. „actually somewhere deep inside him...he did regret that.. atleast I could feel that,its ok if you don't believe its fine.. but please help me save him... he was the one that taught me everything" Yahweh kneeled down and started begging Arua."what can i do?" Arua touch her neck where is a tattoo the bond between her and Galamouth. Yahweh looked at her standing and observing, the reborn world as the beautiful skies were colored by beautiful rainbow , that appeared on the middle tying up the two horizons, diving the sky in half. The rainbow was constructed of five colors : Orange,Red,blue,green and yellow, and like in a comercial that once aired on tv, candy started falling out of it,drops in different colors, falling gently as a rain. „First gather positive Mana for yourself and others, giving just few to the Dark Lord you'll be able to strenghten his light" Yahweh replied, looking at the colorful candies that were falling down from the skies. "Mana?" Arua asked surprised „yes spiritual medicine, its an extraction of positive energy just few drops eaten , can drive the darkness away from anyones hearth" Yahweh replied "hmm...how can I have it?" Arua asked her question. Yahweh smiled „just gather the candy , gather everything you can" Yahweh expressed talking."Candy?"Arua surprised "why it must Candy?!" Arua asked surprised „is there something wrong with it being candy, I thought most people like candy...he won't suspect that the positive energy would be disguised as candy" Yahweh replied. "ah...hmm ok" Arua answered and open a portal that connected to her dimension. Take some candies and throw it to her dimension. She do it again and again. Yahweh looked at her and took some as well throwing them inside,the candies appeared scattered throughout , Galamouth's base, fending away the darkness.. unnoticably for the Mad lord. Yahweh smiled „thank you ,with this will be able to create a diversion, make sure Blaze gets a huge bag of them... he will need them" Yahweh replied „ I sense his battle will be the most critical and one of the hardest" Yahweh added."hmm ok" Arua replied observing , the candies which shined like mini lights inside the darkness."It can purify... Any kind of darkness?" Yasumi replied. She was curious about it, as she had never heard of such a thing. Yahweh looked at her and smiled „ yes it can, these candies are light ..the positive energy in the universe..I simply crafted it out as candies.. they taste good too just like a real candy.. which I hope will become popular in the darkness enough to purify it all" Yahweh replied."but.... Wouldn't they think of this as silly?" Yasumi asked looking at Yahweh as Gabrielle walked towards her „ but thats our intention , they wont suspect something as silly as candy to be a weapon , in this war creativity wins" gabrielle replied. She paused and thought of their answers."Well, if you did succeeded, wouldn't there be an imbalance in the equilibrium?" Yasumi asked with Yahweh smiling „ for

something earned another is lost, that's the universe's rule" Yahweh answered her question. "But if the balance is distorted, it could be destruction of the universe. Every force needs to have an opposite." She said meekly. She knows that the darkness isn't nice but they all need it too. Yahweh smiled and answered „that's why we're doing it, to restore this balance" Yahweh replied. "why? Is the darkness too great already?" Yasumi asked. Yahweh looked at her „yes Galamouth's actions tipped the scale towards darkness and destruction, were trying to use this opportunity to restore the balance" Yahweh replied. She was listening intently to Yahweh's explanation. "I understand now." Yasumi answered. Belzebub smirked, watching and listening behind them, the old vicious man. listened intently, taking notes on Yahweh's words, then made two steps forwards „if we allow Galamouth have his way, everything will be destroyed... everything that was ever created.. keeping things in balance is not just the light's concern, if the darkness becomes stronger, the more violent we will become, eventually being reduced to monsters, full of hate and rage. Then everything we gained will be lost, we Gods of the dark, serve the dark side... but we do not want to be slaves of destruction..we hate darkness as well" Belzebub expressed and looked at the girls „at least we don't want Galamouth to ruin things for us, we won't give away our freedom" Belzebub replied. „we used to be God's once, God's of light but were betrayed by the humans and cast into shadowy hell pits, where we endured suffering, until humanity reminded themselves of us again, and restored us to our rightful place, as guides and not just demons and monsters. There's no demon in entire existence, that would desire returning to that prison. That's why we will agree to that alliance Yahweh" Belzebub replied. "sis, can I eat some candies?" Aya looked at the Candies. "Yahweh, can Aya eat the Candies? It is ok ??" Arua asking. Making Yahweh smile „sure she can, they're meant to be eaten but just a few ok" Yahweh smiled and looked at Aya warmly. Belzebub took some and eaten them as well „I remember when you first treated me with them" Belzebub expressed, handing them over to the other Dark God's, Zavebe included. Yahweh whispered to Arua's ears „everybody has a light side, but sometimes we need means to activate them..that's the candies role...they're like that pearl you used earlier to delete the information Gabrielle recorded, on top of that this allows me to monitor the other God's actions, by having a marker implanted on them...I can concentrate on engineering their souls" Yahweh explained quietly to Arua. "But even the gods have both sides....." Yasumi muttered under her breath. „yes but it's easier to hate, than to love this medicine was developed by Blaze Master, it helps the dark to purify into light..its like a blessing for these these, that were punished by God for not bowing down to humanity, we need to eat this and our sins are deleted, that boy is truly ingenious... plus with this it's easier to come to terms with it" Belzebub continued talking to Yasumi. Yahweh nodded „but only if you wish to confront your fear, this is a device that makes you're light stronger, but it's up to the individual to confront it.. still with this little thing, which is imbodied with God's energy even for the hardest sinner, it's a trifle" Belzebub expressed in astonishment. Arua turned her head towards her sister smiling "u can eat it Aya but just few of them" Aya smiling "ok!" she jumps to the mountain of Candies and eat some. making Yahweh laugh „Galamouth really has an interesting entorage doesn't he „ He asked Arua, smiling. "forgive of my insolence but...." Yasumi paused, thinking if she should ask another one. "I wish to confront mine..." Yasumi looked at Yahweh.. with Yahweh looking at her „yes go on..." Yahweh started. "B-but... Isn't this kind of cheating...?" Yasumi replied smiling, as Belzebub and Gabrielle laughed „were at war damn it !... of course will use all

the cheap shots to win !!" Belzebub replied , laughing „well you're right if you think cheating is wrong.. but its to important game to simply loose it... n the ends the cause justifies the means..and the candies are more like a spiritual coffe they won't do the job for us, they'll only start the process of purification but more for most its enough" Gabrielle answered Yasumi's question . "entorage?" Arua asked suprising and a bit confused „entorage means court , you and Aya belong to Galamouth's official court... according to the information we recieved from our intelgence ...thats why its really important that you help us" Gabrielle requested looking at the two young girls. "me? Help?" Aya surprising. She stops eat candies. Yahweh smiled and replied petting the young girl gently on the hair „ yes we need you're help little one" Yahweh smiled „ a king asks you, will you accept" Yahweh smiled and gently petted her hair.Yasumi took one but didn't eat it.

"I don't want to cheat, but if things get critical..... Well, I'm just going to bring it with me." Belzebub smirked „ a wise choise" he laughed."then i can be a part in war?" Aya smiling "no! You cannot!" Arua screaming. Yahweh sighted and looked at them with a worried expression „unfortunetly what you want is not an option at the moment, you're both involved already ,you will fight either for us or Galamouth... but its up to you choose , on which side you are" Yahweh explained and walked away, taking few steps and sitting on the white stone. Gabrielle looked at them and stood up in front of us „Listen here...the entire universe is at danger...we'll need all the hands we can get.. most of our forces will engade in battles with each other in order to collect spiritual energy, this is the normal part of the Eternal War, the classic good and evil fight, which will decide the fate of the universe, in places were darkness wins, total anihilation , known as the apocalypse...where good tryumphs we will restore the paradise, humanity once lost...many worlds and billion of lives will be sacrificed.. to the darkness.. many souls corrupted and twisted for billenia's. This is the prize we must pay.. for Lord's Galamouth madning ambitiion, which corrupted and twisted the balance...unless we correct this..and reorganize the energy structure...we will face another danger. The dominance of the system and the world going into eternal chaos...The God's creation loosing its power and the world returning to nothingness" Gabrielle explained looking seriously into Arua's eyes"What if..... Someone doesn't fight?"

Yasumi asked, quite fearfully this time.

"What if, someone just stayed in the middle?". „We created the System as a pretext for humanity to organize,gived rise to institutions as means to gather and distribute the wealth ..and enforcing prosperity.... but humanity soon became blinded by the powers we lend them, and rendered us obsolete. Dividing the divine and scheeming to overthrow our rule on mankind, cutting down the ties, between the material and spiritual worlds... in essence killing off their own spirits and any ambitions, becoming slaves to their own means of opression, forgetting the purpose of the laws we imposed on them. Forgetting about their own emotions and needs,in original draft the System, was suppose to be an extention of family, a huge family that would expand the whole globe,or universe would be called a global or universal community this would be divided in smaller groups, known as states, which would be ruled by their respected kings or queens, with blessing from us. These rullers in essence were to form the heads of this family, beeing parents of these societies that would distribute resources among their own citizens, just like parents feed their own children, or distribute other neccesities. As their right hands we formed the organizations, which were reffered to as institutions, and specifically formed

organizations that were referred to as houses of Gods , churchess or temples, that were to remind these rullers and institutions , of their true purpose. Unfortunately we know now , where this lead ...the expansion of the idea was too large to maintain effective control over it, any disease like greed or darkness started spreading quickly and rooting out the evil from the structure became impossible, thus the rich and wealthy...the rullers betrayed their own nations, concentrating only on their own greed and lust for power. Forgetting about their citizens, and about us...committing hideous crimes in our names, justifying destruction in the name of love...creating wars. Deceiving and even corrupting that ,which was holy.. like the morning star Lucifer.. who was my brother. forbidding true love and any forms of pleasure, or spiritual education, mocking it and describing as occultism... eventually terrifying the populace by making us monsters, that are bent on destroying the human race. Creating a culture of ignorance and hate even to our kind. Killing the seeds of true enlightenment and even corrupting the Universal metropolis we engineered ourselves. The System and its whores betrayed everything that was noble and good in the world, doing more harm than evil or darkness itself would be capable, creating empty shells of billions wasted and humiliated, by creating laws that took away human free will. Something that was granted by our true creator God. Eventually condemning us all into spiritual exile creating , prisons from their own hate and ignorance . A terrible punishment for the sins we did not commit. A terrible punishment for merely surviving , the human will. Exalting the material plane, above the spiritual one, corrupting the visions and desires of immortality, killing off the legends , and rays of hope in billions of hearts. The system that was to expand spiritual and physical development, was made into a tool that oppressed it , bounding humans and us, to chains that were un-breakable. Creating more evil and darkness than it was even necessary. Making some of us fight the humans just to survive in their imagination....instead of allowing us to guide them or help them with our experience. ...if we don't use this opportunity to break the hold of the System and its System whores ... then it's not just the dark gods who will end up becoming monsters.. the light might vanish for good ,, Yahweh explained looking at Arua's face . ,,the light that is neither white or dark, but is a hope to billions by merely showing its different colors...if we get cut off from the spiritual energy, crafted by the humans.. we won't be able to maintain control over the dimensions, to give hope by revealing our presence, create miracles. Then the humanity will really become alone, as we will truly depart from the material realm, into a secluded part of reality.. into nothingness. Death might become permanent...for these that will die will have no means to be reborn, joining our imprisonment." Yahweh ended his explanation Arua stared at Aya "Aya, I think this is the time. We will be separated again" Arua hugged Aya warmly "thanks for everything Aya. It's your first war and the last one" Arua smiled. Yasumi was intrigued by the goodbye. "What do you mean....?" she asked a bit surprised. "you will know if it's already the time" Arua forcing to smile....Yasumi really wanted to hug her or to hold her hand, but she can't do so, since she knows, they aren't friends yet. But she can feel the pain behind the smile. "Y-you.... Aren't going to die... Are you?"...."I want but I cannot die because of 'this'". Arua showed her tattoo in her neck "because of this!" Arua replied looking sadly, and hiding her sorrow in her smile. "A-a life preserver...?"

Yasumi gasped. "life preserver?" Arua asked. Yahweh looks at Arua ,,it's an effect of his experiments right ?" He asked quietly. "yeah. It's our bond" Arua forcing to smile. Yahweh looked at her and smiled ,,but there's no reason for you to break it... you two could still be together.. it seems that this tattoo allows that" Yahweh



replied . "no. I'm tired. I don't want he controlled me" Arua replied. Yahweh sighted and petted her head „I know but have patience, you'll be free soon enough"Yahweh replied. Arua din't enjoy the fact her soul was trapped by Galamouth, as long as that tatoo existed, he could summon her back anytime, and Arua hated this fact.Yasumi nodded."Yes. I've only read it before but this is the first time I've seen one. ... But... It's probably torture for you....!" Chills went down her spine. As she realized that Arua , lived because of Galamouth's manna,not beeing able to depart and choose a fate of her own. Galamouth tooked away her freedom, as he needed that child, as a pawn in his mad plan. Using a summoning technique, and inplanting a life preserver, making Arua's existence rely on his power, naturally any resistance to that fate would be futile, but with this war . There was an opportunity to end this, freeing herself and her sister, and after she realized the truth about Galamouth she didn't want to have anything to do it. She just wanted to run away to the fares, part of the spiritual realm, away from Galamouth , together with her sister , she wished to find some happiness in this way. Yahweh was troubled, but he knew that Galamouth went to far, imprisoning and tying up Arua's to himself,she had the right to reject the insane path Galamouth took,but Galamouth wouldn't ever accept it. As the Mad Lord was possesive of these that he deemed,necessary the darkness made him lust for more and more.Because of his own wounded hearth,and hurted pride, he wouldn't allow anyone to ever reject his ambitions. This was his own curse and the deepest wound he inflicted on himself.Meanwhile Yahweh walked over to Matrimona, and started performing a spell on her,reading different symbols that appeared on her body „Arua can you help me with her ? We need to get her out" Yahweh asked Arua. He took his cane and hitted Matrimona's body, stricking the hearth. Actually connecting his cane with Matrimona's hearth, making his cane shine in bright light ,shooting out a white whirlpoolic energy , that became a tornado formed of light. Spinning wildly the light was slowly sucking the world inside it, as the skies became silver, and cracked into tiny particles, that appeared as dust.creating a very powerfull vortex, that was sucking everything inside , making it fade away. the green grass dissapeared as if it was removed , revealing nothingnss, changing into multicolorfull mini threads, that tied themselves to the white vortex. Creating something of a micro ladder, or net , on which Yahweh,Gabrielle, Aya,Arua and Yasumi could walk, not beeing engulfed by the chances that were taking place,in the Vortex a chaotic micro dimension was formed, with white shining skies, and rivers full of golden energies that were drawn into the center of this world, as a dark sphere like egg , risen above the golden fluids ,shining in red aurora, with huge green serpents tying themselves around the spheres. Squeeching ,trying to ward off the new comers ,that aproached Matrimona's secluded world. Yahweh walked forward and looked at the serpents, which proceeded to attack him , squeeching as Yahweh's body sended a powerfull white flash that made the serpents to go back, squeeching terribly and looking at the god with their creepy red eyes, full of hate and rage. Coldly tying themselves to the shell of the dimensional egg, doing everything to not let them pass, spitting up fire and trying to burn Yahweh as he created a defence circle in the air with his cane, defending himself with a blue energy shield, from the infernal fire „Let us pass.. guardians of hell !!" Yahweh shouted, but the hellish serpents ignored Yahweh's command, feeding on the darkness inside Matrimona's hearth. Jumping out at him and trying to bite him, as Yahweh knocked them out, one by one as they jumped, purifying them with his light, making them squee as the two serpents dissapeared, he than rushed forward, breaking the dark shells of

the dimensionmal egg, creating an explosion, as they all were surrounded by the darkness ,that came out from Matrimona's soul. The world created from Matrimona's memories. Meanwhile Matrimona was looked in her old memories . Even thought at first she wanted to get out from that lost world now she felt like she belonged there . She lost her will to go back to reality . The more she stood there the weaker she grow , yet she didn't cared . After a time she saw how her powers fade and even her existence started to disappear . Before she became disappear she used her last power to appear in Galamouth's dream . She couldn't move or speak , yet in his dream she appeared crying while smiling . After she disappeared from the place she was looked in her body was consumed by few black serpents and disappeared in a black flame . Yahweh walked forward looking at the naked Goddess that was hovering inside an sphere,in an embroyicall state, crying from an unknown sadness. „here she is.. locked in her own Sadness, this woman has a strong desire to be saved” Yahweh replied and looked at the girls „but how to do that ?” Yahweh asked looking at the girls, hoping they would take his initiatiative ,trying to give them a lesson.Observing the darkness created from Matrimona's negative emotions, her own depression and desperation, that binded her soul. She herself floated naked insane a pink sphere,the goddess was a prisoner of her own making. Nudity as a symbol of something bare,without any protection. But also without any dignity ,as the dignity was strapped away from this once pridefull goddess. In Ancient times there was no reason to wear cloths, or to hide our bodies in any ways. it was seen as something unnatural, but this ideal state was changed by Eve, who became the first Matrimona Del System. The Whoë of the System isn't a single Goddess, its not a tittle that should be associated with just Yn, rather the young goddess of the dark was decieved by the tool of human arrogance and greed, and was forced to represent it, as a divine container. System however dosen't rely on a single container instead it makes , everyone into a corrupt container, which I describe as the „Matrimona Del System” Ofcourse it also uses a spiritual entity ,like all emotions to control its own actions . This Entity can appear as a Goddess, the Golden Duck from one of Polish legends , is in fact this entity. But it also uses other Goddesses, to hide the real spiritual entity's Identity. In Spiritual world everything creates a form , an interface and symbol that describes it. In the language of True God's creation, hence the reaper is a symbol of human death, which one could converse with. Using the Reaper as an interface to this force of nature, anger can thus be personified like a animal or angry human,Zavebe is also used by this emotion as its spiritual interface. Because its possible for one thing to use many containers, everything lives and posses a free will, in the spiritual dimension thus, a force like rage can accept someone to be its own container and representant, this is a beneficial practice. Because the force uses the human container to work in the human world.Zavebe thus made a pact with his own dark emotions,this is the true purpose of a spiritual contract. If you make a contract with God,to represent him ,be his or its speaker, you become God yourself. The thing we know as God is in fact Creation itself, the ancient non human creative force, that works throught its own creation. This is the true Identity of the thing we describe as God, and in creation there is no rules, we may create good things and bad. This won't discriminate you in the eyes of the TRUE GOD,because God is creation. This is the true structure of God, the ultimate secret of this world. Whether you believe in it , or not is inconsequential. Because its you who create God, if you're a follower of religion and believe that Jesus Christ is you're ultimate saviour , you are right. If you're a follower of Lilith and want to gain a paradise or hell , than you are right too. But

one thing that you should learn is this, There is one GOD. The True GOD that has no name, everything else, Jesus, Lilith any other Deity is just its survent. So thats why .. the ancient text warn you to not make other Gods above this one GOD, for its ,the God that is creation above all Gods, these gods are in fact interfaces connected to the one true GOD, meant to represent it. Be mindfull of that the structure of the TRUE ALMIGTY GOD the ones that rules throught trinity. The trinity is perfection, a tool created by the Almighty God. A human that is a son of GOD the spirit that is inside us all, and is the holly bound with God, the holly spirit, and God itself. The true mastermind that remains invisiblle and can only be seen in its own creations. For the Glory be his or hers he is both , he predates all divisions . This is our Master our Lord God. the Trinity is perfection as the man , who bounds with spirits in the name of God, is perfect. Cause this man than becomes a vessel of creation that works under God's will. God rewards these that surve him, with free will. One may obtain everything he desires ...as the Lord will tend to the needs of these that are faitfhull. The System however that is just a tool, creates deceptions and lies. One that understands that were forever bound to God , is therefore given wisdom. To see the deception, that Whores of the System are just containers of lust and greed. The God will give you everything that the system can offer and more, for God will give you the power of creation, which will be bound only to you're own will. Such richness cannot be recieved from a structure, as its not able to provide something it itself does not posses. While God posses all, beeing creation itself . This powerfull force of nature, that can only manifest throught life, joy an everything it made to grow and reach its full potential, be it a single seed that evolves into the tree, or a child that matures into a responsible human. The same force that creates destruction, as its necessary to bring something fresh. When something stagnates it must be destroyed to make room for a new concept. Sometimes its necessary to remove two bricks, just to add one larger that fulls the space more perfectly and allows, to add other bricks into the building that is our reality. Thats why there is no reason to be affraid, yet remember if you desire something ask God for permission, offer a prayer to God and you will be rewarded, if you're arrogant and try to take things forcefully, you will be punished. Summoning a spirit in reality, whether its a deceased relative or mythological Goddess like Lilith itself requires , permison from God. Make an offering to the true God , and be sincere , and the spirits won't harm you. Because once you respect their Lord, and make an offering to God for the sake of a spirit, its the same as representing them in a royal court in front of their king. You ask for them to be rewarded from God. God who is the ruller of all accepts this request, and its given glory. Even a Fallen one will feel pride to surve or help a man, who stood up for them with sincerity to God, asking that it would be cleanshed from its own darkness. In spiritual world there is no evil or good, just ignorance and wisdom, sometimes a man can free an ignorant spirit, making it advance in the spiritual realm. This creates a huge bound and therefore the spirit than becomes a loyal friend, but in order for this perfect bound be created, one must first learn to cleanshe onself and for most , it can take entire live. Thats why its good to head all warnings and not contact the spiritual realm and God with ignorance and fear. Or the Spirits will be angry , only throught a proper bound with God, one recieved a wisdom that can allow us to contact with our brethren on the other side. if however one throught ignorant practices , gets a spiritual guide learn to love her or him, even if he's the one described as the Satan. The beeing willing to be a guide for ignorant should be respected , for this is the first stage of learning wisdom and the correct path one should take in life. Meeting a 'Satan' is also a symbolically warning. Satan means

respect God, you lack respect of the Lord , so he sent you the accuser to be your guide learn through him to love and understand God. For what you receive from interacting with Echelon and God, is exactly what you give. Therefore Satan or any spiritual being that, shows up represents something that's hidden in ourselves, and since Satan is the symbol of rebellion, then a question we need to answer ourselves is why we do rebel from the bond we have with God. Satan that personifies all evil, is merely a character that makes us reconcile with all evil inside ourselves. So that we can join God's entourage. Once we learn this we can even consider Satan as something interesting, and it's all right to be interested or amazed with the figure identified with him, but we should remember that Satan is just a servant of God, he's not above him. Even if he would state otherwise, remember that Satan is a deceiver , and represents lies and the way we deceive ourselves. There is no reason to fear Satan as he's defeated , respecting him however doesn't mean we're afraid. But it's offensive to be rude and arrogant , respect every single being as it was created by God. Satan is amazing, as he's a concept we created with the help of our master God to represent something, this symbolic language shows the wisdom and the true glory of God and we should praise God's wisdom above all. Be grateful for joy but be sad, be grateful for pain and suffering as it will increase your joy. Yahweh knew this secret and was observing Arua curious of what the girl would attempt to do. The dark fluids covered the invisible floor. Making the environment change rapidly as thousand eyes opened themselves, to become spectators...to a very unusual spectacle that was about to begin. Galamouth's head priestess Arua , walked two steps forward smiling, while shqueeches were heard, the souls were crying in agony..corrupting this plane. The dark muddied waters, were filled by blood and started to boil under the pressure. Making the silver smoke evaporate forming greyish clouds, from which purple lights could be seen, as the molecules of the cloud were slowly engulfed into a reddish spiritual energy. Creating an unknown and perhaps even un-orthodox pattern of activating multiple micro seals that were embedded in the small, molecules of the organic matter, the blood was created from. A terrible stench filled the air, while the toxins were released from green bubbles. Creating a light green smoke, Yahweh took his cane and started to stir the blood, making the blood rush upwards , as it created a defense structure collecting the poisonous gas. The poison was absorbed on a molecular level. Sucked inside by hungry antimatter molecules that digested the matter in the manner of few seconds. That was the power of this slim and fragile shield created by this strange bloodlike fluid. The fluid started boiling even more, as molecules were being connected to each other forming an aggressive reaction, a powerful energy was filling the blood. Making tiny serpents visible , swimming like little fishes. Connecting to each other while themselves being built from the tiny dark molecules, they started forming something grotesque that started a gentle yet aggressive whirlpool inside the blood , as it attracted more matter into a crazy dance. Noises were being heard as the Shadow birds aggressively filled the area jumping into the blood trying to eat the serpents , only to disperse in terrible agony while from below a girl dressed in white with dark hair, Mystica appeared jumping down formed from the shadow birds that interconnecting , created a humanoid shape, which then materialized itself as her , she gently jumped behind . Yahweh walking in front of her smirking as her eyes shine in red „ you finally revealed your true power to me .. Lord of Darkness” Mystica smirked while saying that , being a bit frustrated by the fact he was released. Looking back at Arua and Aoi she again turned her gaze towards the forming vortex . Considering the rest of the spectators not worth of her attention. She

continued to glare as the vortex, took on a more humanoidal shape. Than diving that into one smaller , and bigger. Making them both grow and materialising themselves into two characters, the smaller one was Misa with golden hair and violet eyes, dressed in all black. This was the Dark Misa the corrupted and twisted part of Misa, which Galamouth used for his experiments. The other was the Mad Lord himself ,who was standing in front of the group smirking , as his red eyes shined in all the evil ways „you didn't think Ill let you escape without a fight.. did you Yahweh !! I want to introduce you my latest subordinate, she's more deadly than the children you made friends with.. this is the Dark Misa!!!... I hope she proves to be more fun” Galamouth proclaimed laughing in a more menacing manner, enjoying the disquist in Arua's and Mystica's eyes, as Misa smirked covered in darkness "Mi-misa?" Arua looked at the girl schocked, noticing the red aura that appeared, engulfing her body. Understanding that the girl was controled, by Galamouth's dark energy. Meanwhile Galamouth smirked and started dividing himself into, two more figures, the two Galamouths than walked behind the Dark Misa, forming a triangle with her, where Misa formed the top."stop it!Galamouth!stop!don't do that!she its not a doll,she is human. Don't controlled her!" Arua screamed , terryfied of what her master was doing to her friend, making Galamouth laught as he enjoyed tormenting his priestess, he looked madly and started staring into Arua's eyes with incredible lust and obession „oh dear Arua ... what a foolish little girl you are, you who never were human , dare to speak about humanity.. let me ask little girl... yes WE shall discuss this than ! Let me ask you what is a human ?” Galamuth asked his question , trying to torment the girls sense of dignity and looked madly into the whole situation. Beeing corrupted by his own mind and twisted logic. The darkness took control of his own hearth, making him able to do even the most inhumane things"i-i... don't know...but... don't do that...don't controlled my friends..." Arua is going to cry. She didn't want her friends being controlled by Galamouth. She didn't want their future vanished because of him,and that made her despise the mad lord, and his insane ambition. Galamouh's crazy plan involved toying with human destinies, with the destiny of all life forms. Erasing futures, and theire dreams. Destroying everything because of his own hate and ignorance. Galamouth hated his own existence and knew that it wouldn't ever end,therefore he desired even more strongly to end his own existence, and proving to God that he was more superior to him,because he could destroy what God created. Ending his own nightmare and desintegrating within his own madness, smiling he replied to Arua , who was crying because of him „You see Arua thats why you're just a survent, and a survent should obey her master in all things...priestess you were granted another life, to fulfill my ambition ,only when my plan is completed , you shall achieve you're freedom, you're like these humans than my dear girl...for humans are just pawns for us Gods who play our eternal game,it is we who decide theire fate, we rule over them and the humans surve us, because it is we who granted theire lifes... Arua you dared to stand up to my desire...you wish to chalenge my domain, than very well prove you're worth to me or stand aside and watch the masters decide you're fate, for mere pawns shouldn't interfere with the will of theire masters” Galamouth replied smirking evilly at Arua, thinking that his share superiority ,brooken Arua's will to fight. Underestimating his priestess, seeing her only as a toy.Galamouth viewed her essential ,needing the power and knowledge of the soul people. He used her experimenting to understand the hidden secrets he desired. But he underestimated the girl Arua was brave enought to stand up to him, and to his darkness "but...i know human can still continue their live with

their hearts. Even though they didn't have any ability or magic with them. But I'm sure they still have hope! they will! for their future" said Arua, looking bravely into Galamouth's evil red eyes, making him look at her with disgust as he merely wanted to break her will, using the dark truths he knew „this hope is a lie, illusion they create because of fear...this is truth about this so called humanity !”

Galamouth turned back at Matrimona who was still trapped in that sphere, and pointing at her with his finger continued his lecture „You see what happens with humans, who understand the truth...they break ... these humans are nothing more than disgusting rats.. they flee every ship that happens to sink. Humans are weak liars and deceivers. They commit crimes to their own kind, waging wars, spreading ignorance and preaching hate.. if humans were to decide between life and death they would choose death, just to delight in the agony of their comrades dying next to them. Humanity is a parasite and I will eradicate this problem.. destroying these corrupted shells” Galamouth replied smirking from his wisdom looking at Arua with disgust, finding that her heart wasn't afraid of his darkness....but delighting in it as well as finding out that Arua is a very interesting toy to break, Galamouth therefore licked his lips, delighting in the agony Arua according to him would go through, if she loses her faith in mankind."you lose your heart. No, the truth you broke your own heart. Your dark side threw your heart away. You see human with your eyes, but you didn't see them with your heart" Arua calmly replied looking with pity at her master. While Galamouth started to get annoyed, by the fact that she dared to stand up to him confidently, smiling to cover his own frustration and talking back „yes it must be your natural human ignorance that makes you defy my words... that's right I should have known better, why waste talking and communicating these important facts to a mere inferior being. My own foolishness amazes me.. but it's ok even I the Dark Lord Galamouth could enjoy some entertainment...you may try to entertain me then come on Arua fight me ...I promise to not make you suffer too long...we got work to do after all” Galamouth replied, mocking Arua's sense of bravery. Trying to hide his own anger as he, understood it would make everyone aware that Arua was winning that argument. In his delusional mind however Galamouth thought that he was the one that was winning."why do you want me to fight you?" Arua asked, looking at him. Making Mystica walk to Arua's side smirking and playing with her dark hair „if it's a fight you want..I'll be happy to accommodate you...once this is over you're going back to your cage !!”

Mystica screamed looking angry at the Dark Lord who only smirked. Looking at Mystica he replied to her „oh right I forgot about the guardian that failed her job... you think you can contain me... you alone wish to capture my soul.. little toy, you're nothing more than a tiny bug..I'm waiting for you all... let's make it happen shall we....this was supposed to be an interesting game, I want to see my Dark Misa in action now !!! So let's not waste anymore time !!!” Galamouth replied, shouting out the last words, making Mystica angry and prepare herself to attack. Gathering spiritual energy and looking straightly at his opponent."I won't fight...well I want to get free too but..." Arua continued looking at Aya, knowing that it would endanger her little sister. Galamouth smirked and started teasing her „that bond is your greatest weakness” he proclaimed laughing, while Mystica jumped towards him rushing in demonic speed, being intercepted by one of the copies Galamouth's that changed into a huge serpent, and tied it self to Mystica throwing her to the ground, making Mystica use her hands to rip the serpent's body into the pieces, and quickly stand up, jumping back moving hands straightly in front of her face, shooting a huge light beam at the serpent's body, that quickly materialized into the copy Galamouth, assuming its former

place as Galamouth smirked „its not easy to break throught my defense barrier” Galamouth replied mockingly, while Mystica looked at him madly. " well i won't fight but i know someone who want to fight you" Arua admited opening a gate. making me go throught it , as I entered the stage. A bit schocked only moments before, I was sitting at the fountain lost in my own thought , I didn't even close my eyes or go to sleep when suddenly, my conciousness was switched by God to this reality...this wasn't the ussual way of how this was done,you might say it was an emergency and thats why God switched my conciousness to this plane , observing the dark masses of airs and finally realizing that I was summoned to the battle by Arua. I realized that the situation was very serious, thought still continued to be confused ...Mystica was visibly annoyed by my presence and preffered to ignore me,„ok anybody willing to tell me whats going on ?” I asked a bit confused, hearing Galamouth's laughter, observing the assembled group. Misa was standing in front of the group, covered in the dark aura she started laughing like a psycho, while I walked forward,looking at the two Galamouth's behind the Dark Misa, while she grinned evilly „he's controling her again ?” I asked sighting, looking at Yahweh and noticing the rest „so you're here too old timer ?” I asked Yahweh , making him notice me and reply back „hello Blaze , its nice to see you after all this time, fairing well,eating healthy...not causing trouble...Im sorry for making you do this, but we need everybody on our team....stakes are high...You see Blaze if Galamouth wins all life will end, the world as we know might dissapear” Yahweh replied and looked forward, making me reply „ Well I did kinda realise the situation , its not you're ussual predicament is it ?” I answered and looked at Yahweh, while he smiled and replied „Listen Blaze you are the creator, you have a power that is unique even among the most highest of us , in this situation ...you're a key that opens all the locked doors, you're nature and true purpose are hidden behind the doors that lock you're past, before you can win this fight Blaze, you must venture to the place it all started...Blaze Master during this war, you will go back to ancient times to witness you're own creation, there you'll find a knowledge that will make defeating Galamouth possible... you must understand what it means to be a creator” Yahweh replied and looked at Galamouth.I looked at him confused , beeing interested in the things he told me just now. A creator but of what ? what were the things I created, were the thoughts that clouded my mind. What was the journey I was to take ? I continued looking at Misa that was beeing controled by Galamouth, in the form of Dark Misa.Yasumi was just watching through all the ruckus, but she was also thinking and reflecting through all that. I my self was also trying to understand, the words Yahweh told me, and the tactic Galamouth was using in this battle. I knew there was a triangle battle shield creating, this was the dark trinity of power structure, where both Matrimona who was trapped in the sphere behind

Galamouth, and Misa were used to generate spiritual energy that was than distributed to Galamouth himself, and throught him to his evil clones. It was impossible to break without hurting Misa or Matrimona, and Galamouth's clones were used to defend Misa from any harm. Suddenly Misa attacks everyone maaking an ice wonderland.....then she disappear in the coldness. As the cold snow started bursting throught the whirlpool, everything started freezing, making even me feel numb as both me and Yahweh ,started combating Ice , with fire creating a whirlpool of warm energy that created a warm barrier , protecting the rest of the team. Misa remained invisible ,confusing us ,as to her whereabouts. "Hmm.... Echelion is created by our minds, and that means we can also create and control.Hey Blaze! We can still turn the table."

Yasumi said, as she tried to fend off the cold. I was busy making circles in the air with my hands, guiding my spiritual fire into warming the air, ensuring that we wouldn't freeze for the rest of eternity. While Yahweh smiled looking at Yasumi and nodded with approval „indeed I think you understand what it means to be a creator Yasumi... you're right we need to create our own weapons” Yahweh replied and looked at me, as I remembered the words Alpha told me before „I create with my own hands, what I create is warmth, to combat the harsh winds of coldness, I create light to combat darkness. and I can create a path to God” I replied looking back at everyone. I replied looking back at everyone. „listen up, man is nothing without God, we need to create an opening for God !!” I replied looking at Galamouth who was evilly smirking, and enjoying his own superiority. I turned my gaze upon Yasumi who muttered something under her breath. „.....darkness..... Isn't..... Not all.....”

Her voice was drowned by the sounds of battle. While I was thinking, on the way of materialising, what I said. How to open the path to God under these circumstances, and I realized that everything that happens, has a symbolical meaning. That our actions create a code, which consists of God's Language. That our actions create a code, which consists of God's Language. I realized that in order to have God appear, I needed simply to summon Alpha and Omega the girl whom I made my God's interface, by combining her energy with my own...we would open a path for God „Yahweh... lend me your strength I need to combine our energies into a form and summon a divine container I created to communicate with God !!” I screamed it out to Yahweh. Yahweh looked at me and smiled „ All right my friend you have my help” he replied as I jumped away behind, starting to concentrate on my self and locking my mind in an intense prayer as Yahweh turned around and extending his right arm he attacked me with his fire, engulfing me in a redish blaze, that soon turned yellow. While I was standing with closed eyes concentrating on meditation and combining our fire energy, while reciting an ancient mantra I remembered from somewhere. Little streaks of orange shining fluid were coming out from my feet, creating ancient hieroglyphs on the floor, the symbols that formed from this liquid were the visualisations of my prayers that started to manifest themselves in physical form as a huge whirlpoolic fire rose upwards, with me still standing in the centre, while it made its way towards the skies, touching and combining with the borders of the dark whirlpool dissolving it, as if sucking entire dark energy and growing in size, making the whirlpool slowly disintegrate, cracking like glass falling down to the ground, forming into the dark crystals that were, engulfed in orange flames. While I screamed, engulfing my self in golden light that flashed forward engulfing everyone, destroying the darkness. Making Galamouth gasp in fright, as he desperately sacrificed his clones to create a shield of darkness. While the light filled the area, making all of us stronger, even Mystica started to feel less weaker and more happier. While Light energy formed into some strings and attached itself to every member of our team, combining with strength of our hearts. A huge surge of light blasted from the green now skies, and started to form into a humanoid shape, making itself smaller and taking on a more feminine figure, a beautiful woman was being formed out of light, on terrified Galamouth's eyes, as the woman started taking a more physical shape, she directed one of her hands at the dark shield destroying it, making it crack from the insides. While I who was no longer standing in the whirlpool, nor in any flames walked forward, to greet this handsome lady dressed, in an wonderful huge blue dress, with enchanting blue hair and green eyes, she smiled towards me „ You called on me, and so I am



Blaze" Alpha and Omega replied , smiling happily. While Galamouth , confused observed her silky like , gently brown skin. „What on earth are you ?" He finally asked going back. Alpha and Omega looked at him,gazing into the dark haired mans eyes ,smiling innocently „I am Blaze's personal manifestation of God, the beginning and end I am the Alpha and Omega...the celestial body of the lord" She replied and looked at Galamouth without any fear. "Beginning and the End.... So that's who AlphaOmega is."Her voice was trembling with awe.

"I can't believe it...!" Yasumi , continued as Galamouth looked in fear , smirking evilly. His eyes shined in red as he walked even more, while Alpha slowly walked forward being able to intimidate even Galamouth. „Well done Blaze.. to think such a fool would be able to create such intense connection with the Lord.. IM amazed, but that doesn't mean you won.. NO it means nothing in front of my divine wrath !!" Galamouth screamed walking backwards trying to figure out, a way out of this mess. „your plan will fail,destruction shall end" Alpha calmly replied intimidating Galamouth even more, as he really started to be visibly terrified looking with hatred at her „ Go away from me you beast !!" he screamed jumping back wards with incredible speed, as Alpha silently stood in her place. Looking at the Dark Lord,with pity and some form of gentle sorrow „how can a child stray so far away, without seeing the light of the sun ?" She asked calmly looking at Galamouth, who continued to stare at her with disgust. "Your highness.... I think I know the reason why."

Yasumi answered. Alpha warmly stared at Yasumi, smiling „come closer child" She invited Yasumi , smiling warmly. She stepped forward slowly, feeling a little nervous."It must've been the accumulated malice that was never released in his heart. Plus Matrimona's resentment and pain added up to it."Alpha smiled and looked at Galamouth „yes pain and sorrow are created by tragedies...they cause darkness to grow in human hearths, and that's when people and demons abandon me , the one that is both their mother and father,the one that gives life to all things. The one that is inside in the darkness inside everyone's mind and hearth , humans however need mind and hands for work, forgetting about the hearth,which was designated to be a mediator between the hands and the mind, in order to accomplish creation all three elements must be combined, alone all of them are useless however, mind which is creative,joined with a loving hand and strong hands can make the impossible possible" Alpha replied smiling gently towards everyone even to Galamouth , and then continuing to look at the Mad Lord that was terrified of the loving power of God.„yes pain and sorrow are created by tragedies...they cause darkness to grow in human hearths, and that's when people and demons abandon me , the one that is both their mother and father,the one that gives life to all things. The one that is inside in the darkness inside everyone's mind and hearth , humans however need mind and hands for work, forgetting about the hearth,which was designated to be a mediator between the hands and the mind, in order to accomplish creation all three elements must be combined, alone all of them are useless however, mind which is creative,joined with a loving hand and strong hands can make the impossible possible" Alpha replied smiling gently towards everyone even to Galamouth , and then continuing to look at the Mad Lord that was terrified of the loving power of God. Yasumi observed the whole situation from a safe distance, Galamouth locked in his own fear."I feel sad for them...."She said, as she looked to Matrimona and Galamouth.

"This isn't right!"..."when is it right ?" I asked looking at the unknown to me girl, sighting a bit and observing the whole situation „don't get your hopes up...this isn't over yet" I reminded the girl and continued analysing the ground, noticing

energy patterns, flowing in the dark blood „ you see this” I pointed to the small purple lightings, that appeared in blood , lighting up the dark liquid.

"Actually it's kind of the opposite of what I was thinking, dummy....!" Yasumi's voice was filled with annoyance."I'm worried for them!" the girl replied, making me annoyed, as I replied„ shouldn't you be worried for us....Misa is close..I can feel her nearby..worry about that why don't you” I said it sighting,while a creepy laughter belonging to Misa was heard near by."Jeez! I'm worried for us too! But i just can't help it!"She gotten cautious as she heard Misa's laugh. Galamouth smirked evilly as suddenly a spear impaled me through my body ripping out my vital organs making my body fall into the blood, and was consumed by the dark bloods that was filled with , dark fish that appeared similar to little pirania's that ate my flesh, before being engulfed in red flames and dying in agony,disappearing and forming into golden light form that started growing from the , dark blood pool ,as I was slowly regaining my human appearance, materializing into my human form , smirking, while standing in the former position „you better try harder psycho!” I screamed. Galamouth only smirked jumping from Alpha who attacked him with a powerful force, running after him. Forcing him into combat and dueling him in a karate like fist fight. Mystica observed the battle preparing herself , engulfed in blue smoke. Suddenly Dark Misa appeared , grinning evilly as the spells insignia started shining around her feet. The Blood started boiling and terrible screams were being heard , as souls appeared summoned, screaming and covered in eternal darkness , they looked like dark shades with red eyes,they floated everywhere chaotically ,screaming with aggression, while bodies were forming out of the decaying blood, the bodies of zombies were created , forcing the dark souls to possess them, making them cry from inhumane agony, the greyish decaying bodies of man, woman, children and many animals started moving to attack us,furious for being woken up from their eternal slumber. Misa was controlling the walking dead with a dark magic using them to kill us, as the zombies growled terribly and started running at us, from everywhere , I jumped back and took out my laser swords using it to cut off heads of few that dared to circle me around, forcing me to make a circle myself. "T-this is all so twisted!How are we supposed to survive!?"Yasumi sighted and pulled a sword from her dress."Can't believe I have to use this." She admitted looking at ,a rotting corpse of a dog, with visible ribs bones, covered slightly by rotting meat , was walking towards her growling terrible ,than suddenly jumping the air and attacking her furiously.She quickly sheathed her sword, blocking the dog's fangs. The dog was spitting green acid onto the sword trying to break it.The dog was spitting green acid onto the sword trying to break it. Yasumi moved She quickly jumps away, and tried to slash dog down. Hitting it successfully the dog, broke into tiny pieces, as if it was made from porcelain. Mystica jumped into the air and stretched her hands while moving upwards, calling on her shadow birds that started flying towards her, cutting through the ghoulish birds that were controlled by Dark Misa, the Shadow birds,sliced the dead animals into gruesome pile of flesh, that then turned to the black blood,which was falling like rain on us. Mystica concentrated , making her eyes shine in green as her shadow birds were engulfed in blue fire, adding to their strength, as the shadow birds then started spreading the blue fire among the decaying zombie birds, that perished turning into the dark blood that slowly returned to the ground, I was running through the living dead slicing the through one, on one destroying their hideous form, while avoiding being attacked myself, jumping away or jumping over them, while constantly moving. Yasumi stopped, thinking again.

"Hey everyone! Think! Think that these creatures aren't vile! Think that they're our allies."... Mystica sighted attacking the ghoulish birds, and sending her summoners to rip off the corpses that were attacking below „its not that simple..the mad lord blocked our thoughts, unless someone breaks the spell in that blood...we cannot influence anything !!” Mystica shouted out, while I rushed back towards Arua, tapping the shocked girl on the shoulder „Hey what are you waiting for !!! its you're cue damn it !! you're one of the soul people,use you're power to purify these soul and send them to heaven !” I shouted out, annoyed at the fact she was too shocked to even respond, I gently shaken her up,trying to wake her up from that trance.„Hey its not the right moment to doze off !! you maggot !!” I screamed at her furious. "purify the zombie?" Arua responded waking up from the trance that was caused by her fear. „yes use the powers of the soul people, please”

I asked gently, patting the girls hair. trying to make her feel secure, while we were protected by Yahweh's fire, that engulfed the zombies that tried to attack us. We stared at each other, as Yahweh nodded and sighted meaning to tell me, that we needed to hurry up with this whole procedure „come on, you gotta to save everybody, especially Aya !” I screamed showing to Arua how terrified her little sister was.Arua looked at Aya "but they so many..." she explained hesitantly. While Mystica jumped behind her looking a bit annoyed „weren't you supposed to be his pupil ....priestess or whatever, I command you to use you're magic to make these pests go away !!” she shouted angrily at Arua, and looked behind at Aya. „my my you better be quick about it...or you're sister just might get killed” Mystica tried threatening her,while I looked at the girl angry a bit. „don't you think you're going to far with that ?” I asked her annoyed by this behaviour „shut up.. Im not talking with you... garbagge” Mystica replied, looking around as the corpses were still being destroyed by her shadow birds, and Yahweh's fire."Will you guys, just stop fighting!?" Yasumi shouted."A home that isn't united, will be destroyed." Mystica looked at her, not understanding anything „ its not like you understand right Mystica” I teased her. „understad what ? you all are foolish creatures anyways” Mystica replied and looked at Galamouth „once I bind him my purpose in life will be restored, nothing else matters” she replied correcting her hair and looking at Arua."Aya must die!that is the only way" Arua finally shouted making me gasp „what did you !?” I replied a bit shocked and continued staring at the girl."No one has to die here!!" Yasumi shouted out "Are you giving up already!?"She shouted, feeling desperate.She wanted for things to be normal again."you can all die here .. I don't care”Mystica sighted replying „dont loose you're faith !! this battle is drawing to an end... Galamouth is retreating,we just need a little more effort to, thats all guys, please don't let stress take hold of you and remain calm.. Arua you have the potential to save you're little sister !!”Yahweh shouted back while defending us from the zombies „we need to work as a team don't forget that !” he added."if u all want me to purify the zombie then Aya must die!" Arua shouted out angrily."n-no way...! Is that the price for everything!?" Yasumi terrified gasped. While I looked Sadly at the little girl that was teasingly smiling.Aya smiled grining a bit "its not! I'm her weapon. I'm the half of her soul" Aya explained happily,no longer being affraid while I walked over to Arua and bitch slapped her in the face with my full force „if we won't stop Galamouth many people will die, many people will be forced to watch their brothers and sisters die in front of them !!! so stop being fucking selfish and do that already !!” i shouted angry,both angry at the fact Arua was hesitating and that Aya had to die.But I also knew that she would be resurrected in a new form after the war, and that she would no longer have to fight with

us. Arua kicked back angrily "how dare you! Galamouth never slapped me! How dare you slapped my face?!" she shouted at me, while I looked at her eyes, we don't have much time...do it!" I answered and walked away, rushing to battle. "then break their head. Its more simple the purify them" Arua advised me, while I stared back, sighting annoyingly and looked back at the hordes of these walking dead. Making me wonder, whom or what were they, that they ended up like that after dying. This is their true nature that revealed itself, upon our life. Animals that were tormented by the humans, just for the sake of Adreline ended up grotesque and terrifying monsters, the same with these humans that now walked in decaying flesh. All were these that didn't value life, or suffered cause of the greed of the system whores, eventually becoming whores themselves. These that growled angrily, were the same that destroyed others, killing hurting and destroying. This was hell, thinking of death and killing in the name of lust while alive, made them desire the same in this world, for we are who we are. This thought made me tremble, even more when I realised these were the same that called me a monster or rapist, while the same time they were toying with human or animal life... Who were these whores to judge me, when my „evil“ deeds saved their victims. I was despised because I dared to save these, they wanted to destroy, destroying their work. I rushed at them running and cutting off their heads, destroying them without remorse, killing and slaughtering every single of these bastards, to my heart's content. This was my will to fight, no longer resisting myself, I just slaughtered these bastards, that made even me suffer, and they were screaming dying in agony and their eyes were decayed and in some kind of evil fury, all the darkness that resided in myself was unleashed into destroying their body, flames appeared everywhere my flames that burned their flesh as I screamed. Regaining my sense after a while panting... "oh my, he really like killing dead body so badly" Arua admitted staring at me, while I was in my trance trying to fight the walking dead, Mystica stared at me wildly her eyes glowing a bit „my my I dunno who's more dangerous....it seems the useless one is not so useless after all“ She spoke sarcastically, grinding her teeth. Wondering what was the power, that gave me such incredible fury, while I started slowly calming down and continued ripping the zombies destroying one on one, but more of them were coming.

"Humans are intelligent but also ignorant creatures at the same time. They cause trouble but also improve themselves. I wonder... Is there still hope for humankind?" Yasumi admitted as she sighed while at the same time she easily walked by the hordes of rotting corpses and quickly slashed them down. Making them die in a quick and painless death, while Yahweh who also observed my actions, sighted and calmly breathed „well mistakes are a part of being human, in this way they learn and adopt....being born as a human I consider it my honor that I could experience life from human perspective....having human emotions and bound by matter, in an un-perfect world...created out of human free will, this second reality is God's greatest masterpiece, both because it's so true and yet deceptful...and because life created that way, has its own precious value...in truth all sides of this war are right and wrong, Galamouth is right and Blaze Master is right too, people who chose the system or the material world, valuing it over spiritual one are right too...the problem is when some of the sides tries to impose their own will on others, and instead of co-operating with others...they instead abuse, this is the true evil" Yahweh replied, slashing the zombie bird with his walking stick. "I too was once human but.... It wasn't an easy life. But I guess it's worth living for." Yasumi replied looking at all of them. While at the same Misa appeared smirking attacking them with

tornado, after this she used the armagedon magic that makes everything to be destroyed. Distabilising the reality , enclosed in this dimension, forcing Yahweh to stab his walking in the blood, drawing light energy into the dimension canceling the distortion , Misa wanted to create, while she herself run away giggling. "I have a question" Yasumi declared. "It's for Yahweh." Yahweh looked at her, raising his brows „a question for me you say ?" asked Yahweh looking at her, while still being capable to divide his attention, to perform a well co-ordinated defense from the zombie birds that attacked him, being shielded by Mystica shadow birds "Can Gods like you actually die?" Yasumi asked while still fighting with screeching, black crows. „yes we can die" he answered smiling a bit , knowing the answer would shock the girl. He seriously enjoyed admitting it, because he hid mystery in this answer , wanting Yasumi to continue asking him the question. Yasumi stared at Yahweh, confused "Um.... Master Yahweh?" Yasumi waited patiently for his answer. „We can die...but were also immortal, our death doesn't stop our existence it only transform us into a higher level of being, when we die we become life itself that can transform our essence in any material forms we desire, this is what we are now..but what you see is still a form a body I use is that of a matter, its more enchanted than a human, but it also bears physical similarity to one, this is because I used to be a human, I lived and died as a human and then I realized that I could still feel and desire and that with my wishes, my form could be reborn to what you see now, this is a body that although appears to be immortal and never ages can be destroyed, and if its destroyed then I die... only to be reborn into a new form I create for my self , from my own spiritual energy as a being of higher plane...once in a true form there is nothing that cannot be created ...when Blaze died in battle consumed by the fishes in that blood, he at that moment ceased existing in the material plane, that was formed in this enclosed reality, but his existence didn't cease and although he was outside he could choose to return to this battle, and that's when he was reborn... we exist in a form of a phoenix we are these birds , that were praised in many ancient legends for our true form is that of an eternal fire my dear" Yahweh replied and stared back at Yasumi smiling. She simply smiled in response. The revelation was truly amazing even for her. Meanwhile Galamouth was trying to defend himself from Alpha's punches, shielding himself with his fists and then shot out a dark impulse that made Alpha kneel down from pain as he kicked her in the face „what a foolish woman you are !!" he screamed kicking her down , making her look back smiling „you confuse things too much, you shouldn't look at the form but what's inside" Alpha replied smiling as her eyes shined in light green, suddenly a surge of energy exploded forming a circular shockwave that spreaded touching Galamouth as he screamed terribly being burned. Green flames covered his body forcing him to use dark energy, to shield himself making the flames fade away. He continued to look at Alpha with disgust, knowing now that she was a formidable enemy. Galamouth feared Alpha due to the fact she was God incarnated and possessed special abilities, but of course wouldn't admit that willingly preferring to mask his fear with arrogance. Yasumi observed the whole situation from a distance, she noticed that Galamouth was afraid. And felt pity for him. "I pity the fool." she expressed, while the Mad Lord tried to make himself look fearful. The twisted mind of the Dark Lord, the most bizarre enigma's of the , demonical world, concluded a new strategy. Galamouth was a fool to assume the role of Satan, the arch enemy of God, but by no means he was stupid. Galamouth's awkward intelligence made him a formidable foe, while his bizarre nature made him funny at times. These were the qualities of a Mad Lord that should be respected thought „ Stand back you

foolish God... For I shall bring you into oblivion!!" Galamouth yet again proclaimed theatrically, his insane ambition.,, Stand back you foolish God... For I shall bring you into oblivion!!" Galamouth yet again proclaimed theatrically, his insane ambition."What can make this insane lord.... normal...?He has everything already."Yasumi expressed. Yahweh walked over to her erecting a flame barrier around us as we observe the decaying horde being burned in orange flames,I used this opportunity to rest a bit,while Yahweh replied „he has everything , with exception of true love" Yahweh replied, making me smirk „ don't tell me its all about a girl.... or does the mad lord prefer boys ? tragic gay story now thats a new one" I replied ,interrupting Yahweh and walking into the center of the flame circle."Ugh... And we have another jester. What fun."Yasumi said sarcastically.While I looked at her „ You know it was the Jester that was the smartest in Polish history...huh Im talking about Poland again ? huh well here's an interesting information Yahweh,Galamouth referred something about Poland earlier when we meet in his laboratory" I answered Yasumi looking at the girl and then turning my gaze towards Yahweh „Galamouth is a Polish Tatar,his true Identity is duke Dalwing ....he was Emilia Platters lover ....the two would be engaged and living happily ever ,if it wasn't for the partitions ...and Emilia rejecting his proposal on the grounds of morality , and national duty...thought she was pretty much extroverted and might as well not treat him seriously,in Galamouth's mind as well as in the Polish history ,she was idealised into a national hero" Yahweh replied ,making me join into the conversation „Emilia Platter ? oh I met her few times,the real one has the typical Polish personality thats not far from the System whore's one,or moral ones...thought she did deserve the title of national hero...she's not too pretty either rather talkative ...but also very intelligent and caring ...she's a devoted catholic and christian...thats both ,good and bad qualities...well she's not easy to have sex,thought thats rather should be expressed as she's not easy to talk about sex rather than having it ....she lived according to the old principals ...where sex without the catholic or systematic marriage ,its a form of registering relationships in the system and with the local authorities ....not precisely the rigoristic I like to follow you know....anyways its also was a social order and I believe Galamouth being the weirdo which he is now...wasn't very respected by the social aristocracy and environment...they would mostly treat him as a joke" I replied and looked at Yahweh who sighted at me and nodded,,you know your history well ...yes Galamouth wasn't tolerated in the social gatherings,and often would be excluded from the social meetings of the true Poles,due to the fact he was an Tatar orphan adopted by Polish nobility out of a whim...Galamouth was treated by them as human sacrifice ,they would praise him if he nobly died during a battle and Emilia's only purpose was to make Galamouth fight in the most dangerous fights during the uprising...you might call it fools luck that he survived while Emilia died ..." Yahweh replied looking at Galamouth."And how is that connected to this battle?"Yasumi asked. Making Yahweh think a bit analyse the situation „ Lord Galamouth ,promised to avenge her death, and to break the seals of his cursed fate as he putted it in his own words,since he didn't take Emilia's personality into an account ,the other things he could blame would be the society and the spiritual realm,thus he seeks to destroy both the material and spiritual ?" Yahweh explained „well the real Emilia was caring and probably considered him as a friend,but that at the end she was extroverted and pragmatic and Galamouth wasn't husband material...I believe he could be shunned also from the fact his weirdness came from introversion ,just like we all are considered weirdos by the mighty extroverts who think they decide our

fate" I replied observing how the fire engulfed the decaying birds. "Weren't Lady Matrimona and Galamouth siblings before?" Yasumi asked. While I looked at them surprised, and a bit shocked, „Lady Matrimona ?....Matrimona is here !?!“ I asked surprised, hearing that one of the Goddesses that patroned the system was in the same place as me, it was very hard to approach them. Yasumi looked to the black sphere behind Galamouth and inside it is a human-shaped figure. "Lady Matrimona and Galamouth... well... They had problems that resulted to this." I looked a bit enraged, „Lady Matrimona Del System ! one of the cursed Goddesses we have all problems because of these, she's the Whore of Babylon ! actually it's kinda fitting for the one that assumes the role of Satan to marry the Whore of Babylon, the two is known as the worst enemies of both the spiritual and material, the system that denies our spirituality and our soul and Satan that hates all creation of God" I explained and looked annoyed, sighing „damn it I thought that Matrimona known also as the spouse of God, the second too Lilith ....ok well Yasumi, Arua and the rest have you heard the story of the first prototypes, back in a very very distant past in the times of basic creations. God developed a male prototype a male personality which is implanted in all of males, this personality was known as Adam, to offset the male personality and to make it complete he created the first female prototype ...which was a failure...after the failure came another female prototype known as Matrimonit or Eve ....the original Eve was the sustainer of the male part and the original consort of male God's persona known as ADAM, the failure which was to independent, and equal to the male counterpart, was named by the humans as Lilith...her fate originally was to be abandoned...not because Lilith was impure but was too perfect for the whole situation to evolve, both Adam and Lilith didn't want to back down representing equal characteristics...thought God didn't destroy Lilith he made her into a guide and permitted her to exist. Meanwhile Eve, who was a more submissive personality had completed the design more perfectly, and the so called Extroverted society was formed....However unlike Lilith who was an introvert, extroverts oriented themselves on the outside and could care less about their true feelings, while Lilith who was introverted, decided to create a male that would complement her, thus she gave birth to Samael, who was an introverted male personality. Thus God started existing as four different personalities that started to interact with each other, the culminating point being the seduction of the Extroverted Eve by Samael the introverted male, which uncovered the main fault the extroverts had, which was artificial bounds, while Eve acted according to Adam's will, she actually couldn't care less about him, having someone more attractive than the Adam persona, the Eve betrayed Adam, consuming the forbidden fruit, who was Samael...thus Lilith who felt outraged by Eve's actions, who dared to take something she created for herself, decided to pursue Adam...this in turn enraged Eve, who saw Lilith as a threat to her position as the wife of Adam the God's primal male personality, and decided to create a division between the Extroverted reality, which we know as the material world, and the introverted reality we know as Echelion, resulting in what we were taught to be as Adam's and Eve's expulsion from Heavens... While Lilith and Samael remained in their own world known as Echelion...this is how both the spiritual and material were created...this is also how this battle were taking part started...now the Adam and Eve were the protoplasts of the mortal and material society, with all its politics, and the creation of system....Lilith and Samael were branded as Demons and Samael became the first Satan.....Eve and everybody based on her became the original Matrimona's Del System or what we refer to as System whores, Lilith and Samael became the basis for the spiritual

world and what was later defined as Introversion, All Extroverts however hail from Adam and Eve...and therefore there's an Eternal war between the two personalities ,caused by the original four prototypes ....now the problem we face here is simple ...both Eve and Lilith were created to satisfy Adam, however the Extroverted male that is Adam can only form a proper relationship with Eve , who is also an Extroverted female, while Eve could be a caring friend to Samael the Introverted male, she will never form a proper relationship with him...while at the same time Lilith who can be Adam's companion will not form an Extroverted relationship with him, because she's not submissive and perfect ,however she will form a relationship with Samael,whom she created to adore and be her perfect counterpart" I explained looking at Yasumi."sis why we...didn't help them..." said Aya while show Arua something in her hand. Arua look at Aya hand. There is a candy. She surprise "ah...that candy... You want to fight Aya?..." Arua looked at her smiling."so what will you do with that candy,Aya?" Ask Arua. She have bad feeling. Maybe Aya want Arua to give the candy to Galamouth. "you will do this sis,give it to Galamouth"Aya smiling. "...but...how can i give its to him. There is no reason that make Galamouth want to eat it!!" Aya smiling "ah...then kiss him that's good idea,isn't it?hehehe" hearing that Arua face going red. "NO?! I cannot do that!!" Arua screaming . „that would work on me thought" I replied...looking at the battle in front of us,and noticing that the entire area was almost cleaned from Misa's zombies „we could try making some girl from our side have sex with him..but than again its something thats my weakness not his" I explained smirking and blushing at the thought. Imaginating the Pervy scenes that would take place " no! No kiss no sex! Give me another idea" Arua still screaming. I looked around the scene,seeing how Mystica slashed throught the dead bodies,destroying most of them in the process, and than looked back at the girls „forget about that .. first we need to help Mystica" I answered. "good. Then i won't do thatembarrassed thing" Arua open a portal some of her spirits come out. "maybe it will help a bit" this made mesmirk as gazed up into the situation. „yes it will" I admitted , smirking "but i dont know what spirit that i must use?" I smirked „ a powerfull one" I explained."powerful?maybe i must use my wolfs"....."Do you think they could make throught to Galamouth, Misa's Zombies are making things difficult" I answered observing the hordes of the dead , beeing engulfed by Alpha's blue fire, and purified by light, While Galamouth smirked observing the whole situation , than going by pass the Schocked Alpha making her stand behind him as he moved his hand maniacally „you see God !! how this irrational defiance can be complete, ultimate destruction , the ultimate fire that will consume is what I desire come destruction come my desires, we shall create oblivion !!! yes look at this spectacle oh ye arrogant fools.. that stand in the way of the ulimate death... you are weak .. you are so insignificant ..." Galamouth exclaimed laughting madly moving his hands forwads and creating a huge black energy beam that was quickly shoot at us making all of us avoid beeing hitted , as Galanmouth appeared in front of me trying to punch me in the face as I avoided ,while he attacked Mystica forcing her to use blood to shield herself ,from the tentacles he used trying to corrupting her soul „foolish fools you will never stop the innevetable , this destruction will be the punishment to all of you for the arrogance!!!" Galamouth exclaimd madly „ I told you this before you're the arrogant one !!" I yelled at him and looked at Arua ." i can use my wolfs to stop their movement for a while then i'll try to help Misa" Galamouth smirked and teleported back to Alpha as she calmly observed his actions,turning around and jumping away „fine do that quick" I replied observing the zombies,when suddenly an idea came into my mind „ hey Arua what would



happen if the wolfs consumed these candies, could you fuse the power of light with you're spirits" I asked looking at the girl, hoping it was possible. "I dont know. I havent try it before. I'm not sure" the girl replied making me look at her „than go ahead and try it ...hmm maybe I could try using a force field attack combining it with you're wolfs as cover up" I replied. The zombies were crawling drinking the dark blood "ok. " Arua open a gate and take of some candies. " well,hope my spirits will find" give some candies to the wolfs. The Candies were thrown by Arua throught the golden gate, creating a golden flash inside, while I started slowly gathering all of my spiritual energy, prepairing for one of the most intense attacks in this battle.

The wolfs start howling and eat the candies. But suddenly a huge amount of energy attack Arua. No one attack Arua. Arua thrown far away. She try to stand up and see what happened. She see her wolfs are became light ball of souls. "its...my magic...the candies...vanishing my magic?!" Arua shocked I looked back at the situation angered „what the hell is happening" I yelled while Yahweh sighted and calmly looked at me „this the most pure of postive energies,it cannot be combined with darkness" Yahweh replied, while I yelled angered „you could have said so earlier !!" I yelled and looked annoyed while calming , in order to not waste my energy „damn it ! just fuckin damn it !" I vented out my frustration.The ball of souls come near Arua. Arua check everything. "Blaze... I...cannot remake them..." Making me ever more pissed „great this is just great ...were fighting a battle and we destroyed our weapons ...damn it Yahweh how could you of all people make sucha blunder!!" I yelled at him „its function is purification not combination , Blaze I suggest you check things more throughtly before risking you're resources" Yahweh expressed and continued fighting the remaining zombies.Arua looked confused. She eats all ball of souls. Making me wonder ..what the hell she was doin „what are you doing ?" I asked suprisied ,watching as Arua consumed the bright ball."A-Arua....? What're you doing...? I don't think you're supposed to eat that....!" Yasumi exclaimed with worried. I looked at her serious a bit and sighted „let her do it...we need to do something now !" I yelled and looked at the upper skies, noticing the strange patters that appeared in the golden surface of the skies,that made this dimensional cealings."Well.... But still... What will happen to her!?" Yasumi continued while her face shown sincere worry. Arua continued biting and swallowing the ball, while I helplessly observed the situation . In the truth ,no one knew what would happen now,Arua finished eating the souls. She fell comfortable. She can sense that amount of power come back to her body. But her tattoo active. Arua look at Galamouth. Galamouth smile evilly to her. "he know...that eats souls is taboo..." Arua replied, meanwhile Galamouth observed the situation slowly his red eyes shine ,as he suddenly moved his hand making the Misa zombies desintegrate into the dark blood,they were createn from this „I was waiting for this" he quietly commented observing the situation. I continued looking shocked , while the zombies that were attacking us suddenly dissapeared . „whats going on ?" I asked , while Mystica walked besides me „he cancelled his attack" Mystica replied observing him closelly. Yasumi rushed towards Arua and started questioning her "What happens... to the souls that get eaten...?" she quickly asked her question worried."oh the soul fusion with my soul. And i have they ability now" Arua smiled while prepairing to summon a spell "Don't worry Blaze i can use their ability" Making me schocked as I continued to observe the situation."Miss Arua....? What's going to happen then...?" Yasumi asked while prepairing herself for something she felt could happen now.,it seems that Galamouth anticipated this ,thats why he cancelled Misa's

undead army" Yahweh replied, while I smirked „ ah I see he did that so we wouldn't take control over them...so thats what happened" I replied while looking at Mystica who was grinning „but that means the bastard is unprotected" Mystica replied."ah..." Arua replied watching him, she knew what Galamouth wanted from her. Arua looked at Aya "Aya, go! don't let he find you ! open a portal then run away" Arua tried to warn her little sister , but Galamouth appeared in front of Aya smirking wildly „Aya come to me !! together we shall finish my desire..change into the form you were destined to take" He commanded into Aya, making me run towards the little girl, trying to attack him but beeing reppeled by a powerfull force explosion „Blaze go keep Alpha company !!" he replied. Arua rushed to Galamouth. Her speed same as the speed of her wolf familliar. She is standing between Galamouth n Aya "Don't touch her" she commanded to Galamouth, while he smirked „oh why whats wrong with me touching her ? „ he asked mockingly, and walked closer."because she's not your doll" Arua replied making Galamouth laught „and what is she if not a doll ...created for a very specific purpose my dear ?" Galamouth asked smirking evilly."i won't tell you" Arua pushed Galamouth away but he grabbed her head „if you don't tell me than I shall force it out from you...what is AYA's secret !!" he yelled and started pushing his dark power inside Arua's soul, establishing a spiritual connection, with the use of his darkness that started sucking out all of Arua's memories. Arua screaming. Arua take candies from her pocket. Without thinking she ate one candy. Arua kicking Galamouth. Don't want he sucking her memories and try to make galamuth eat the candy, because she ate it Galamouth sucked one inside himself feeling a terrible fire burning inside him and spliting blood, as Aura kicked him back ,he jumped away into the above „Curse that little wrench" He replied landing near me ,and walking back to Matrimona, while I was beeing helped by Alpha „no matter , my desire is close to completion...this event here will be finished shortly" Galamouth replied. „I know but we will get to you .. I can promise, you won't be able to hide using fake bodies anymore !" I replied and faced him."Hey person," Yasumi called to Blaze, "How can we release Lady Matrimona from that prison? Aren't you the "key" to everything?"

She said, as her face barely shows emotion. „You're talking about the system Goddess, why would we want to do that ? she's better off beeing locked in there ...well she is the Matrimona Del System...one of the Whores of Babylon she's my worst enemy.. how about we kill her" I replied , looking at Matrimona and noticing something odd, the woman was completely different from the ones I meeted earlier, she had noble features like an angel, that was corrupted by the darkness of the system „she does cute thought" I replied and analised the females, features. She even looked desirable a rare treat ,for someone that personalises all of the greed and lust. The whores of Babylon were ugly but could use theire ocultic powers called Glamour, I my self a user of ocultism and demon faitfhull to the spiritual and God. Was of course immune, but this woman was really beautifull."That's because I am her servant, and I need to get her out of there." She looked a little annoyed at Blaze.

"You can't just say that you have to kill her just because she's your enemy... if you do..." Her expression darkened."I'll hunt you down and take your life away, myself." I smiled at the girls taunts ,and walked over accompanied by silent Alpha and omega „why don't you kill Galamouth than, isn't he the one holding her captive...sorry but I don't know the whole details I just know that Ill have to something eventually, as to me beeing a key... I remember it beeing said 75 years ago, during the events that freed Galamouth at the time I was a part of the

Trinity force, that tried to prevent this calamity, but it looks we failed.. thought it really did take 75 years for real to meet him again.. I guess they're certain developments that cannot be controlled through time and place" I answered „Oh you're wrong Blaze !! time flies differently according to individual perspective, what appeared to be 75 years for you, was 666 thousands years for me... you see Blaze restarting my research in the physical world after my imprisonment in the spiritual took a lot of effort and research ...it wouldn't be possible in the span of a single century...yes it required careful planning and analysis, scrupulous implementation and modification, restoration and even decoration, examination and confirmation....in your case Blaze it was merely necessary to allow you to rest, a 75 years of relaxation, made you ready to fight this war...that's why even you shall be my toy in this game Blaze" Galamouth replied laughing madly enjoying his superiority over everyone of us...suddenly Misa started running getting out a knife chopper and trying to kill everything and everyone, started attacking me while I avoided as she smirked wildly, „Damn it Misa wake up !!" I started yelling as she continued her insane attack. Galamouth smirked while Alpha tried to punch him, making him avoid the attack „you must adore my dear Misa...corrupted like this, she truly is magnificent" he replied in the oddest form of ecstasy, I was able to notice trying to avoid being cut by Misa. This was truly a bizarre fight, with the rest of the group residing to being mere spectators. Partially because of the fatigue, but also from the fact that the whole situation was nothing more than a farce, Galamouth as mentioned before used merely a false body to control his actions. Thus destroying this one wouldn't resolve the battle at all, it was one of these trying situations, that needed to be handled with. For the casual observer, one not accustomed to the realities of the spiritual world the whole situation would be strange and bizarre. But we must remember that the spiritual defies material logic, the casual behavior in context of this battle was common sense. After all these events for those that are well accustomed, with spirituality are just a farce. The God had already implemented safety measures to prevent the situation spiraling out of control...therefore there wasn't any probability of it ever threatening God's creation, the only thing that was to be dealt with, was the distribution of the spiritual energy created from this farce. That was Yahweh's and other God's true purpose and obligation, the matter of dealing with Galamouth could be left to anyone, including me and other children, for in reality the whole situation was child's play. Amusing spectacle in which we all were to play our roles till the end. This is the true purpose of adventures, or special events. Life is a complex virtual reality game after all, governed by programs and artificial intelligence, whether we use this term...or the term spirits... or even if we refer to these as demons or angels...we get the same meaning. For everything carries the divine signature of the creator. In everything we can find the traces of the micro and macro cosmoses, that are around us. In ourselves we find the connections to the spiritual. Hence even by writing we create events that can happen in distant futures, and if we were capable of understanding that we may write our own wishes into reality. For the book of life is always open in front of our eyes, we just often do not understand the language in which it's written, as it's a very ancient one...thus all these events were also symbols and an attempt at writing different things into existence....I still continued avoiding Misa's stabbing, having it more harder as she increased in speed. Then suddenly she stepped back in the darkness....after a short while we could hear Misa chanting a spell and then rising from the flames a majestic spectacle begun, the orange flames combined with red ones, into a tremendous whirlpool formed the big fire bird called phoenix, the air started heating as it

appeared squeeching terrible, while Mystica annoyed by this sudden turn of the events directed her own shadow birds which squeeching felt victims to the fire bird...Misa made him burn everything, while I formed a silver defense barrier around us, as Galamouth who avoided Alpha's punches in a crazy dance like fight, smirked evilly. I quickly attacked the bird with a whirpolic silver energy, that quickly engulfed the bird into a metallic transparent shape, creating a metal like statue, with a mirror like surface that started cracking from the head as the shape exploded freeing the orange bird...the bird suddenly waved its wings creating a massive fire wave ...then it flew in the sky and from there it started sending huge, fire balls trying to hit us, while my shield was cracking from the head, Mystica quickly appeared above the fire bird, directing her hand, releasing a web of dark springs, that sprouted at the bird, billion of them formed out of a single string dividing into smaller branches, not losing its straight but increasing as it tied itself to the fire bird, surrounding it with Mystica's characteristic pink aura and trying to drain the bird's energy weakening it. The phoenix started to be angry burning Mystica's strings, as the fire spread rapidly Mystica herself was unable to avoid it and gotten engulfed in red flames, screaming while her material form was destroyed, while the bird made a fire pentagram and cloned itself twenty times, squeeching as the clones attacked and broken our shield, making us avoid being hit. Mystica's ashes fallen to the ground, as she abandoned her physical appearance in this plane and retreated to the shadows of Echelon, for a while searching for Galamouth's real location. "hey! We gotta get out here now! We'll just lose because of fatigue!" Yasumi shouted. "That is exactly what the enemy wants!" she continued as I jumped to her pushing to the ground avoiding the next attack of these birds. „you think I don't know that...but he's the one that controls it....besides were using different astral bodies now ...so the only fatigue he can inflict on us is a mental one...he tries to traumatize us, but both Yahweh and Alpha are working on breaking the seals in this dimensional trap...yes its a trap, you're Matrimona isn't here, this woman in the sphere is just an empty shell...somehow Galamouth retrieved your dimensional path and redirected it into this enclosed reality...so don't worry” I replied covering Yasumi as the birds inflicted damage on me, feeling the pain of these attacks, and being angry at Galamouth. "This can really give us a trauma, because it's ticking me off." Yasumi replied pushing me off, while I shielded us both with a green sphere covering it with a redish whirpolic energy. „I know it can, this is his plan he tries to break our mental composition ...but its real effects are comparable to a dream...don't worry we can wake up ...but if we do it now we won't know his location the seals Alpha and Yahweh are working on, carry this information...thought from your true location I believe you know better than us where his main body resides” I replied looking into Yasumi's eyes. „anyway once were back there ...try to find us” I added, and sat down facing the girl. "That's tough." She left the shield and as she started to attack the grim-filled souls once again. She replied back "I usually see Galamouth in his little laboratory. Experimenting day in and night out." she told me, while I dismantled the shield and looked at her „and what is he experimenting on ? ...well I know his purpose already but what kinda method he plans to use this time I wonder” I replied back to Yasumi... Meanwhile the dark aura released evaporating into air made Misa wake up and remember that she is good, confused she lost the control of the Phoenixess, almost being burned by one, having Yahweh not interfered to save her in time. Covering the girl in an invisible sphere that quickly was engulfed in fire from the bird, crashing into it deflecting the entire attack into the black blood, that now was awfully calm.

But in reality were drawing massive energy currents inside their molecules, absorbing the power Galamouth was lending them, and using it to manifest irregularities in our thoughts. I felt my mind going haywire, my thoughts betraying me with memories of my former defeats, my very soul was being corrupted by intense anger, by rage that was uncontrollable and imaginable, this was Galamouth's own hate that filled me, I looked with red eyes at the world. My very essence was losing to the darkness... that slowly contaminated my hearth, but there was a burst of light that protected my very inner being. Repelling the darkness from, making it leave my soul healing the wounds implanted to me by the material whores.

The power of God defeated the dark currents of energy, forcing it to leave my soul and the body I was currently using, much to Galamouth's dismay, he needed to retreat having lost this battle as the situation was greatly improving for us. Suddenly out of the blue a dark haired man entered the stage, dressed in some kinda casual clothing, like a tourist walked calmly, and looked around dressed in a blue Hawaiian shirt and weird trousers. "Hmm..." He said obviously lost in his thoughts, gazing on the situation from behind his, sun glasses. The guy was walking in the ruckus, not minding the events that happened around him. Ignoring the whole situation just as if he was walking through a train station, or waiting for a taxi. Yasumi noticed this strange person that was walking around. "Hey!" she called out to him, "what are you doing in here!? It's dangerous!! Get outta here!" she screamed being visibly annoyed, as I observed the whole situation, wondering whether the new comer was our ally or Galamouth's servant. The man looked at her, not impressed while I walked over to Yasumi, "I am not afraid" he replied without an effort. Just as if he was extremely bored by the whole situation. Without anyone noticed, Arua hiding behind trees. She is suffering. She cannot focus. She closed her eyes try to connect with Galamouth. Their connection fading little by little "my bond... vanished... But its good news or bad news... I don't have enough power to stand" she replied as the dimensional trees, started growing. These were the outposts to Galamouth's desires, the dark shadows of existence. Perhaps it were these trees that sucked Arua's powers from her, as she didn't even notice when they appear, the silver trees that looked like a Christmas trees. Shining and sending out multiple rays of colorful lights as the dark energy was converted into the signals.. These signals were carrying Misa's dreams well she dreaming that. she is in the. wonderland ...but everything there is broken...and evil and she can resolve the problem with her. special magical knife. Misa opened her eyes, and while remaining in this state of trance, she started attacking the silver trees and everyone around her, "not again?" I asked as she came attacking at me. But suddenly Misa waked up from that nightmare. ..and apologised to everyone..but than again something strange happened immediately and she fallen under trance again... „ Galamouth is losing his authority over Misa" I replied to Yasumi as we both observed the whole situation, while I also eyed the new comer. Galamouth used a lighting flash to throw Alpha away from himself, turning around almost falling to the ground but standing up, he quickly rushed backwards turning back and observing our group, noticing the new comer as well, "It seems this dimension is falling, we have random people or thought forms walking into the scene AT LAST it is my time to leave the stage, Farewell you hopeless fools" He announced, tumbling into a showy figure and slowly dissolving into nothingness, as the dimension started shaking a bit. Arua looked at the trees "it is yggdrasil...?" she asked opening a gate to summon a spirit "come out...Oswald..." A spirit came out. Its a small tree that have old man face. He

wear a black hood sleeve. "what it is, priestess?" said Oswald. "it is yggdrasil?" Arua asked Oswald. „ another random guy?" I asked surprised walking over to Arua, while the dimension started shaking. "what's going on Yahweh !" I asked the Old philosopher „The dimension is falling it won't last long Blaze" He replied , while at the same time Arua was questioning her servant. Random energies were released from the forms they assumed for this dimension, making the black blood evaporate ,and the whirlpool that we were inside dissipate, the sphere containing Matrimona evaporated as well. As the real System Goddess was trapped somewhere else , Misa walked in circles confused by the events screaming angrily. I looked at the above noticing a blue glass like structure revealing itself , as small cracks started appearing. Red energy filled these cracks forcing them wider, the dimension was slowly crumbling.